



REALMS IN THE FIRMAMENT

BOOK 06

Fengling Tianxia

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Realms In The Firmament

(天域苍穹)

by

Fengling Tianxia

(风凌天下)

Synopsis

Ye Xiao was a superior cultivator in his previous life. The three factions of the realm kill millions of people every time they attempt to seize cultivation resources. Wealthy towns turn to wastelands in just a single night. They cover up their crime with an assertion that the towns were suffering from pestilence and disasters.

They forcibly hold all the resources for cultivation, monopolize all valuable practice materials, and keep outsiders from cultivating so that only their three factions could cultivate in the realm. Ye Xiao declared war against the three factions in retaliation for their actions. He fought alone and ended up dying in vain. However, he is reborn into the mortal body of a 16-year-old boy. He will use the powers he cultivated in his last life and slaughter his way back into the Realm. The story begins!

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Rain @ [Qidian International](#)

Translation Edits by Chrissy / Arch @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 501: Too Risky!

Although the king had announced that he supported Ling-Bao Hall, but nothing really happened. He knew everything in the capital. Officials overtly agreed but covertly opposed. Of course, the king knew it!

He had to make those officials pay...

The king turned silent for a while before saying, "If I can bring peace to the kingdom some day, I will walk down off this chair and enjoy some casual and happy life."

His eyes were full of longings.

"I feel so tired!"

The king looked at the royal house, which was full of blood and flesh. He sighed. "Who can measure the pain of all my people with one's own power... A king has to do such thing. He may look high and powerful, but it is cold up there for him..."

Nobody answered to the king's complaint.

What could they say? Don't do it if you don't want to? Many more wanted to take over the chair anyway.

No one dared to say such words.

"How's the fight on Crown Prince's Place?" the king asked, "and the houses of the other two princes? I heard... that they are all attacked?"

"It is people from the two great sects who attacked the three princes." Master Sun looked calm. He said, "Those from the eight noble clans that had been hiding in the princes' places were all killed... It is said that many of the guards died. They did bring harm to us this time."

The king's face moved, then he said, "Oh? So there were people of the eight noble clans hiding in all the three princes' palaces?"

He sounded weird, like he was questioning, also asking. It sounded like he knew it already, also like he didn't know it at all.

Master Sun answered, "Yes."

The king slightly nodded and didn't talk anymore.

Master Sun didn't notice that the king's face had turned dark.

"After this, I will have a meeting with Feng Monarch of Ling-Bao Hall," the king said.

...

When Ning Biluo returned, Ye Xiao had seen Ling Wuxie and the two ladies away.

Ye Xiao had been occupying the higher position in the conversation, but he was scared the hell out when he recalled the conversation.

He was frightened afterwards!

He clearly knew the identity of the three people standing in front of him.

They all had had power beyond Ye Xiao's. With a small thought, they could instantly kill him.

No matter what, things had gone following his plan after all.

That was good luck!

Capability and good luck made success!

"House of the Chaotic Storms... I would love to see you leave sooner than later!" Ye Xiao said, "There will be a day when I meet you in the Human Realm Upon Heavens! We will fight when that day comes! It feels so bad to depend on luck on everything..."

...

When Ling Wuxie and the two ladies returned to the bamboo forest, they found Master Bai sitting there alone, with a weird expression on his face.

"What is it? Master." Wan-Er noticed something wrong first.

It was normal that Master Bai was sitting there looking at the bamboos. However, he looked so upset this time with oppression!

Such feeling had never been shown on Master Bai before.

At least within the thousands of years Wan and Xiu knew, there had been none!

Master Bai was lost in thoughts. He stared at Ling Wuxie.

Ling Wuxie was surprised.

He had never seen Bai Chen with such solemn eyes. He was nervous as he said, "What is it?"

Master Bai kept staring at Ling Wuxie and said, "Wan-Er, Xiu-Er, you two go out and set up guards. I need to ask Brother Ling to do something for me. Do not let anybody come bother us during this time."

Wan-Er and Xiu-Er was surprised, but they still said, "Yes."

And then the two ladies left heading to the south and the north.

After a while, all the superiors cultivators of House of the Chaotic Storms showed up. Under the arrangement of the two ladies, they all went to certain spots around the forest.

The array beyond the bamboo forest was changing slowly too.

"Come on. What is it? Do you need to make it like this?" Ling Wuxie suddenly felt so depressed. He didn't know why.

After a second, he realized Bai Chen was going to do something really big.

"I want... you to work with me to activate the soul power to get into the firmament. I want to pray to the firmament and see... what it is... in the future," Master Bai spoke it out word by word.

Ling Wuxie heard it. He was astonished! He lost his language all of a sudden!

He was then covered with goosebumps.

With his eyes wide open, he shouted after a long silence, "Are you out of your mind?"

Master Bai looked at him with determined eyes.

"No way!" Ling Wuxie was having cold sweats. "This is too risky!"

Only by thinking about what Bai Chen wanted him to help with, he started to tremble. He begged, "Please, brother. I came down here for your help. Not to get us both killed. Don't get me into that. It hurts both sides... You know it..."

Master Bai took in a deep breath and said, "It will be fine. Brother, if I cannot be clear on this thing, my life will be like waste. The risk you are worrying... This low class realm will restrain our power, but it brings some good point. There is a natural protective screen in this world. The divine punishment won't react so fast like in the Human Realm Upon Heavens... Please don't worry. We may get hurt, but it will be worth it!"

Ling Wuxie kept shaking his head. "Screw that. No fxcking way. You can do it yourself. I won't get my ass into it."

Master Bai quietly looked at Ling Wuxie. For a long time, he didn't even move his eyes.

Ling Wuxie couldn't bear it. He covered his face with two hands and moaned, "Brother! Please! Don't look at me like that! I will do it, alright? Whatever you want to do, count me in! I must owe you the entire universe. That is why I will be so willing under your control!"

And then he shouted, "Friends and families in Human Realm Upon Heavens... Take care of yourselves... Today, I am going to put my life in risk for brotherhood... Come on! Let's do it!"

Master Bai didn't know whether to laugh or to cry. He cursed, "You bloody moron!"

Ling Wuxie sighed and sighed. He said with a sad face, "Tell me. What do you really want? Why do you have to go mad at this very moment? If you want me to die with you, you better give me a reason. Just tell me. Just make it clear to me! Let me know what I am dying for!"

...

Chapter 502: What You Need

Bai Chen looked so solemn.

He thought for a while; he seemed to be thinking about the entire thing, and how to explain it all. At the end, he thought of a question that had completely nothing to do with Ling Wuxie's question. "You met Feng Zhiling today. What do you think of him?"

Ling Wuxie frowned. He looked at Bai Chen and thought, [So he realized it too?]

He started to think carefully.

If Bai Chen didn't ask so seriously, Ling Wuxie might not think about it so carefully.

Since he asked, Ling Wuxie could feel that this was an important question! Especially... at this moment.

He thought for a long time before saying, "He is not ordinary!"

He heavily spoke, "What I think of this man is that he is not ordinary at all!"

"Oh? Lord Ling barely praise somebody. I guess this man is really outstanding then?" Master Bai smiled. "Tell me more about why

you think so? You got to have some proof?"

"First, I cannot see through him with my Universal Eyes!" Ling Wuxie solemnly spoke, "Before that, there are only a few people that I cannot see through. You know what it means."

Master Bai was talking with a smile. Ling Wuxie knew Master Bai for years. He knew the drill. That was why he tried to answer with a solemn tone to express the feeling inside his heart.

"Universal Eyes cannot see through..." Master Bai slowly nodded.

He took a long breath out. He murmured, repeating the phrase. His voice was deep and heavy, and his pretty eyebrows started to frown slowly.

He spoke in a light voice, "Cannot see through..."

Universal Eyes was a gifted special martial art Ling Wuxie had. When he operated this martial art, he could see the entire life of one person in his sight.

Even those who were with great cultivation, he might not be able to see that much, but he could still mostly see how their life would go!

That was Ling Wuxie's biggest secret.

Only Ling Wuxie and Bai Chen knew this martial art. Even Ling Wuxie's parents didn't know such thing!

Even in Human Realm Upon Heavens, Ling Wuxie's Universal Eyes helped him a great deal. He could see through most of the people there.

However, in this low realm, he couldn't see through a man who was weak like an ant!

That was weird!

How could such a man an ordinary person?

"Second..." Ling Wuxie said, "He knows a lot. He knows so much that it was unexpected. During the negotiation, he asked for treasures from me using lightning divine punishment as an excuse... I had to give him the Golden Soul Tower. I was trying to figure out his background and identity, but I got nothing..."

"What? Golden Soul Tower!" Master Bai was moved. "You actually gave away your precious Golden Soul Tower? You got that thing through a huge danger! When I asked you to let me hold it for a few days, you turned me down..."

Ling Wuxie bitterly smiled. "Look what fate makes me do. My life is water attributed, and yours wood attributed. Golden Soul Tower fits none of us. Otherwise, I should have been tightly bonded to it already... You know what. Today, when Monarch Feng tried to

bond with it, the entire process went so smoothly. He just did it so easily. That was simply a piece of cake for him! Do you know what that means?"

Master Bai's face looked dark. He didn't reply.

He knew why Ling Wuxie would give up the Golden Soul Tower to test Feng Zhiling!

"It looks like I got extorted," Ling Wuxie said, "however, me and Monarch Feng, we both know that I did not. I gave it to him. I didn't really want to, and he knew it. He didn't really want to accept it. That is it. It just ended this way."

Bai Chen slowly nodded.

"Besides, I have a feeling... This man, he has some kind of..." Ling Wuxie frowned. He thought for a while how to say it, yet he couldn't think of a proper word. He just shrugged.

"A destined opponent?" Master Bai blandly asked. He sounded casual, yet in his eyes, there was sharpness.

"Something like that. Yes." Ling Wuxie clapped his hands. "But not exactly it. After all, he is too weak at the moment. If you really see him as your destined opponent, the entire Human Realm Upon Heavens will laugh at you."

Bai Chen looked up.

His dark hair flew in the air. He moved the lips and said, "Yes. He is too weak. He is even too weak to defend one hit from me. It is impossible for he and I to be opponents... Is that why you gave him the Golden Soul Tower? So that he may become powerful enough?"

"Not really. I was pushed so hard and... Yes. I do want you to have... a proper opponent."

Ling Wuxie looked at Master Bai so seriously. He had never been so serious before. "Old Bai! Do you know what you need?"

Master Bai didn't talk. His face looked dark.

Ling Wuxie said, "The entire Human Realm Upon Heavens, nobody sees the way out of that height. Only a few have the hope to do it. You are definitely one of them."

"If no one keeps forcing you, you won't be able to reach that height!"

"You need someone who can push you hard enough. He has to be good enough to activate your potential and push you ahead. You need an opponent!"

Ling Wuxie looked at Master Bai and said, "If there is anybody who can break out of the realm, I hope it is you!"

Bai Chen looked aside, then he looked at the sky. He didn't want his brother to see how he was touched. He just said, "If I can break through it, I hope that you are the one who do it with me."

He spoke clear and loud.

Ling Wuxie merrily laughed.

"But no matter how, it will take too long to wait for him to grow strong enough." Master Bai sighed. He was quiet for a while before he said again, "Too long."

"Maybe it will take long." Ling Wuxie said, "Or maybe not that long. It may even be faster than you believe."

He said, "That is a topic in the future anyway. Now, explain it."

Master Bai was quiet. He then felt confused and said, "Wuxie, I came here to make chaos. It does harm to the nature, but I just want that Heavenly Mystery."

"Now it is ended."

"That Heavenly Mystery has gone to the upper realm. It may be in other's hand sooner or later."

Master Bai spoke a few words. Apparently, he was so excited today, but he kept holding back his true emotions. "That means..."

No matter how long I have worked so hard in this mortal world,
everything I have done meant nothing!"

Chapter 503: Nature's Secret!

"There is always a trace for the heaven's plan. Especially for a person like me, who has... something." Master Bai paused. He skipped a few words in the middle and said, "Do you think do I have or should I have such a meaningless time in my life? It is also full of blood and violence!"

"It shouldn't have happened, yet it did!"

"Everything keeps telling me now... that all those years are for nothing. There has to be something. Since I am destined to leave now, it means I have finished what I should have finished already here."

Bai Chen smiled. "Isn't it so?"

Ling Wuxie frowned and thought for a while before he spoke in a deep voice, "That's right."

What he said was mysterious, but both of them knew what it all meant.

Things always had reasons. Reasons always pointed to certain results.

The divine nature would never let things just randomly happen. Even on normal people, things were planned. Things without reasons would never happen!

"My destiny is locked on somebody." Master Bai took a breath in.

"Feng Zhiling?" Ling Wuxie realized it.

"What makes him deserve my nine thousand years of hard work?" Master Bai frowned and said, "I have to ask for the divine nature's secret!"

"Why is it!"

Master Bai spoke word by word, "I won't be reconciled otherwise!"

Ling Wuxie kept silent for a while and said, "I see! Let's do it then. I will be with you!"

He then asked, "Do we start now?"

"Yes! Now!" Master Bai seriously nodded.

"To reveal the secret of the divine nature, I can never do it with my own power. Only when we work together, with sincerity, may we get to the way to the nature's secret."

Master Bai said, "If I have other solutions, I will never pull you in this mess. I have thought so hard that among billions of cultivators, you are the only one who can truly work perfectly side

by side with me. I trust you with my life, you trust me with yours."

"If not, even two Heaven Kings can never be able to reach the nature's secret."

Master Bai said, "Since destiny sent you to me at this moment, it must be an opportunity to me."

Ling Wuxie complained, "So it is. You know if we do this back in Human Realm Upon Heavens, no matter how perfectly we work together, we will die for nothing. In fact, in this low realm..."

"Hahaha..." Master Bai loudly laughed. He felt good about his brilliant plan.

"Fine. I am getting used to it now. What are we waiting for then? Let's do it quick!"

Ling Wuxie was urging, but he still kept that bitter smile on the face. He didn't dare to delay, so he sat cross-legged on the floor. He operated the martial art to adjust his physical condition into a perfect point.

Bai Chen was still a powerful man, but his real power had been restrained. If anything went wrong, even though Bai Chen said it was okay, Ling Wuxie would have to deal with it on his own! He had to be cautious!

Bai Chen flew up from the wheelchair and sat opposite to Ling

Wuxie. He kept his eyes closed, focusing on operating the martial art.

After a while, a stream of white light glowed on Bai Chen's head. It was floating.

Almost at the same time, a stream of cyan light appeared on Ling Wuxie's head.

The two different colored lights got closer and closer. When they touched, they became as one.

Master Bai and Ling Wuxie reached their hands together and pointed at the heart. Their faces both turned red and hot.

The next moment, Master Bai pointed at Ling Wuxie's forehead in between his eyebrows.

Ling Wuxie did it to Master Bai too!

When the two fingers touched the head, they both stopped.

A light golden blood drop appeared on Master Bai's forehead. It was getting out slowly.

A dark cyan blood drop appeared on Ling Wuxie's forehead. It was also getting out slowly.

The two blood drops were getting closer and closer. When they were about to touch, they suddenly started spinning.

Between the two men, the two blood drops were spinning in an extreme speed, producing a small whirlwind. It was weak but it created a fantastic scene.

Master Bai opened his eyes. He used one hand to make gestures one by one. After a second, he had made ninety-nine hand gestures. He then shouted in a low voice, "Souls to be offered as sacrifice, we are here to ask for the nature's secret! Among thousands of possibilities, what is it for today?"

He pushed two hands forward at the same time.

The spiritual power kept pouring out as if it met a black hole from their bodies.

They both moaned and their bodies shook for a while. Their faces immediately turned pale!

The two drops of blood were still spinning in the air! It span faster and faster!

Their faces turned paler and paler.

At the end, they looked terrible. Even their lips turned cyan and dark. There seemed to be no blood!

Apparently, they had been driving up all the energy they had for this. They were completely running out of energy!

They were reaching the limitat!

After a while, beyond Master Bai's head, there appeared a small scaled man. He was only the size of a thumb, but it had the exact same appearance as Mater Bai. Beyond Ling Wuxie's head, there was also a small man.

Two small men looked at each other. Suddenly, they both spat out blood arrows.

As the blood arrows crossed in the air, the whirlwind stopped!

After that, a stream of white light and a stream of cyan light rushed up to the sky!

The lights stayed for a long time!

Master Bai moaned and spat out purple golden blood in the mouth. He fell down. Ling Wuxie was no better than him. He spat out some cyan blood and then fell down too. He was in coma.

They both passed out.

The two streams of lights kept rushing to the deepest part of the

firmament.

Master Bai and Ling Wuxie knew nothing about what was happening now.

However, they were lucky. After all, they didn't draw back any lightning strike punishment this time. If there was any lightning strike on them, they would only die without knowing a damn thing!

After a long time, the lights were both gone.

It seemed shaking in the air somehow.

There were a few words that appeared on the floor between Ling Wuxie and Bai Chen.

Things returned to normal.

After a while, when Ling Wuxie woke up from coma, he saw Bai Chen staring at some words on the floor.

How did those words show up on the floor, he wondered. The writing was old style. The word marks were fading away. They had just looked at it for a moment, yet the words were fifty percent faded away.

Master Bai murmured, "Two hosts of the universe? Thirteen

spirits in chaos? What... What does it mean?"

Chapter 504: Unsolved Puzzle!

Behind these words, there were some other words. Those words were blurred, so it was difficult to tell.

Master Bai tried so hard and recognized a few of them. "... World... For? Bet...? Shh..." Master Bai took in a cold breath and murmured, "Two hosts of the universe; thirteen spirits in chaos; a bet of the world..."

He couldn't get more information after that.

"What does it mean? Do you have any idea?" Ling Wuxie got over and asked with curiosity.

Master Bai didn't answer; he was lost in thoughts. There was blood on his mouth, and it just kept bleeding. He just ignored it though. He didn't even blink.

Ling Wuxie could feel that Master Bai was like a star in the sky, profound and splendid. It looked like he was discovering the mysteries of the universe.

After a while, Master Bai spat out blood again. He said, "Literally, it means... there are two persons in the universe. Two hosts. Besides, there are thirteen supreme spiritual animals... I wonder who these two persons are and what the thirteen animals are..."

Ling Wuxie giggled. "So you have thought for such a long time,

spitting out blood, and this is what you get? Even I can understand it this far. Do you really need to act like it is some unsolvable puzzle? Are you trying to create some mysterious atmosphere?"

Master Bai humphed. "Why don't you think deeper. There cannot be two suns in the sky, like there cannot be two kings in a country. It is the same in the universe. There should be only one host of the universe. However, there are two, according to this. Isn't it such a weird thing? Isn't it against the nature?"

"The third phrase is blurred. I can only see 'a bet of the world'. It is ambiguous. Maybe the two hosts make a bet on the world, or maybe there was a bet to urge the two hosts to fight till there is one left!"

"Come on Bai Chen! What are you talking about? I don't see any difference between the two possibilities. Is it really necessary to be stated as two? Are you fooling me?" Ling Wuxie was annoyed!

Bai Chen was surprised. He then smiled. "I told you, you are not smart enough. You didn't agree. Are they really the same to you? They may sound the same, but there is actually a huge difference. The former one is saying that two hosts are betting on the world. They could have betted for anything, small or big! The latter one means the two hosts should fight till one of them falls down. The winner will own the world. There is a huge difference!"

"Oh... I see. You mean maybe there are two great figures who will make a bet on one realm, or maybe somewhere in the universe, in some realm, two great figures will fight for that realm? The winner gets the realm?"

"That's right. But the word 'world' may be beyond the limit of realms. There are two possibilities, but I think the latter one is more possible... Two hosts in the universe, they fight for the only throne of the universe!"

Master Bai took a long breath out. He suddenly staggered. Ling Wuxie hurriedly walked over to hold him.

Ling Wuxie reckoned that if Bai Chen fell down and hit the floor with his current condition, he might die. Even if he wouldn't die, he would get seriously injured. Ling Wuxie didn't quite like holding a man in his arms, but Bai Chen was like his brother. He wouldn't mind making a small sacrifice on that.

At the moment, two bright streams of lights shined in the sky!

One went from north to south, while the other from east to west!

They shined in the endless hollow sky and then disappeared completely, like they never had showed up.

Master Bai was having a bad time. He leaned on Ling Wuxie while staring at the two bright lights. He was thinking of something.

Maybe somebody didn't know that, at that moment, when the two streams of lights shined up in the firmament, from north to south, from east to west...

All the top cultivators in every realm were awaked!

If somebody weren't woken, they were not powerful enough!

The two bright lights disappeared already!

Nobody knew where they went.

"I was right." Master Bai sighed. "The blurred fourth phrase... More words that are blurred... That must be the unreachable secret of nature. Only those destined ones can get to know it. You and me, we can only see the first three phrases..."

Ling Wuxie listened to him, rubbed his head and said, "Brother, can you make it simpler for humans to understand? I don't think I understand any of the words you said."

Master Bai smiled. He was exhausted. He felt weak and fell in Ling Wuxie's arms. He was apparently too weak to speak, yet he still murmured.

"Two hosts in the universe; thirteen spirits in chaos; a bet of the world... What doesn't it mean? If there are two hosts, who are they? Where are they?"

...

Ye Xiao saw the three of House of the Chaotic Storms off, and then he walked to the silent room of Ling-Bao Hall that was specially designed for him. He put an order forbidding anybody from disturbing him. First of all, he needed rest. Second, he needed time to sort out the thoughts in mind. There had been too many chaos recently.

There was a mess inside his brain.

It was getting more and more difficult to sort out.

When he was sitting there quietly, he suddenly felt shocked.

He opened his eyes only to see two streams of strong lights flashing in the distant sky. He was stunned. "What is it?"

The next moment, he heard a sound. - Boom! - He then felt only chaos in his head.

He felt extreme pain and then he lost his sight. He nearly passed out, but luckily, he managed to open his eyes. He then saw a few words in his sight.

He read, "Two hosts of the universe... Thirteen spirits in chaos? Oh? What... What is it?"

He tried everything he could to concentrate himself. At the same time, he felt terrified with no reason! It rose up from deep the bones to the skins!

Master Bai was so confused, but Ye Xiao wasn't quite. He remembered that the first phrase he read in the Boundless Space about the East-rising Purple Qi was 'Peerless lord in the world; foremost spirit in chaos'!

But now another saying showed up to him.

Two hosts of the universe; thirteen spirits in chaos!

[What is it?]

Chapter 505: Raging Egg!

Two similar sayings had two different meanings. What was going on? What did it mean?

Ye Xiao didn't know. He didn't know what it meant, and he didn't know why those words would show up. Master Bai didn't know that the words he spent so much to have the chance to read was being read by Ye Xiao without any effort.

There were only three men in the firmament who read it.

Ling Wuxie, Bai Chen, Ye Xiao.

The others, even the almighty lords, couldn't.

Ye Xiao wanted to figure out what it meant. He tried to recall the words he just saw, but he realized that he couldn't remember the scene anymore. It was like the words just showed up in his heart and disappeared like nothing happened.

Hmm. He still had a blurred image of it though. There was a few other words under that line.

"Is it... World... Bet?"

Ye Xiao rubbed his head. "What is going on? What does it mean here?"

He couldn't figure it out. Suddenly, he felt the world was spinning.

The shock in the room became more serious!

It was shocking more heavily.

Ye Xiao didn't dare to be reckless. He stopped thinking about the words, then he moved his spiritual mind to the Space. He was shocked by what he saw.

The spiritual qi in all the Spaces were raging. All spiritual qi was running to one direction like it would never end!

When Ye Xiao looked at it close enough, he was speechless. Something made this happen. And it was exactly...

"Oh my god! Brother Egg! What are you doing?" Ye Xiao's eyes nearly popped out.

The egg should be almost the size of a watermelon, but now it had grown bigger. The small watermelon had become a huge watermelon. It was like an eight kilograms watermelon.

It kept growing. The spiritual qi was still running towards the egg. It was like rivers all running into sea.

The egg was absorbing the spiritual qi like he never did before. The spiritual qi he absorbed this time was crazily more than all that he had done in total!

"Brother Egg! Don't be crazy, okay?" Ye Xiao was stunned. "What the hell is going on? Are you trying to kill me? Destroying the Space?"

Ye Xiao had no idea why the steady and calm egg would rage up like this? He didn't know what motivated it.

Apparently, if the egg kept swallowing like this, the spiritual qi would run out. The Space might collapse!

The egg was slightly shaking, like it was trying to say something. It just ignored Ye Xiao and kept absorbing the enormous spiritual qi!

The spiritual qi kept rushing into the egg. Brother Egg didn't look overburdened at all!

Ye Xiao had entered the Space for just a short time. As Ye Xiao had seen, the spiritual qi the Egg absorbed during this short time was hundreds times enough to make him explode. The Egg was perfectly fine and it still kept swallowing!

Ye Xiao was shocked. He then entered the Wood Space. The Egg was crazy. He reckoned the Wood Space must be in a bad condition right now!

He just got in the Wood Space, and what he saw cause a huge pain in his heart. The Wood Space was not only in a bad condition, it was nearly ruined.

The green life spiritual qi that had been floating in the air inside Wood Space was now all gone. Spiritual qi was still drawn out from those medical plants. That was the soul energy of those plants.

The medical plants that had been planted densely in the Space were now all falling down.

If the energy continued to be drawn out, those plants were very likely going to be ruined!

Ye Xiao was terrified. He looked around and saw the Water Space. The blue glowing water drops that he collected for such a long time had half disappeared. There were less than half left. There were still water spiritual qi coming out, running into the stream that moved to the Egg.

The Gold Space, Earth Space, Sky Space...

They were all drained up.

It even started to drain the energy from the Cosmic Hades and the Heavenly Crystal Marrow.

The Egg was being overbearing this time! What he did was simply excessive!

"What the fxck!" Ye Xiao shouted, "You bastard! Stop it! Stop it now! You are ruining my Space... You piece of sh*t!"

Ye Xiao shouted, but Brother Egg didn't seem to even slow down. Ye Xiao rushed over and pushed the Egg back to the plate. The spiritual qi kept rushing over. After a while, Ye Xiao's Jing and Mai had been ablated hundred of times by the strong stream of spiritual qi.

Just within seconds, his dantian was filled. He might die by exploding after a while longer. Ye Xiao exclaimed and left that place. When he looked back at it, the Egg was still swallowing! It wouldn't slow down at all!

In the plate in front of Brother Egg, there were densely many dan beads. There were at least thousands of dan beads!

Every bead was supreme level.

However, Ye Xiao didn't have time to care about the dan beads. He just kept shouting with anger, "Stop it! STOOOOOP! You piece of sh*t! Do you know what you are doing? You are draining the pond to get the fish! You bastard! You..."

No matter how Ye Xiao cursed, the Egg didn't move. It just kept absorbing the spiritual qi.

Finally, when one third of the energy of all spiritual items in the Spaces were drained... Ye Xiao was astonished and didn't know what to say...

Those items in great quality were drained one third. As for those in lower quality, they were thoroughly drained up and turned into ashes!

Ye Xiao looked at the Egg fiercely. The Egg was dangling in the air. It seemed to know what would happen to the Space if it kept swallowing the qi, but it just had to do it. It was an important moment now...

The next moment, Brother Egg flew up to Ye Xiao, who was raging in fury already. It kept spinning, like it was trying to fawn. It seemed urging Ye Xiao.

It was saying, "Give me more... Give me more... Quick, quick..."

It was like a starving pet, fawning on his master for food.

Chapter 506: Draining the Pond to Get the Fish!

Anger had filled Ye Xiao's chest. He was speechless.

[What the hell do you think you are doing?]

[I watched you drain the spiritual qi from all my treasures. I watched it running into you. My god. Those are all great stuffs...]

[You actually are not satisfied yet. You are even urging me!]

Ye Xiao realized that no matter what the reason was, something must have gone wrong on Brother Egg's side. It must be a big problem.

Brother Egg would never ruin the Space. It should cherish the Space much more than Ye Xiao!

The only reason was that... it couldn't control itself.

Was it about to hatch?

If it was, and if there was not enough spiritual qi for it, terrible things would happen.

It was not just failing to hatch. It would bring huge mess in the

Space!

"Damn it! Hope I did owe you this much!"

Ye Xiao made a quick decision. He gritted his teeth and hurriedly took out the ninety-nine medical materials. He put them into the Wood Space right away. He just showed the materials, and the spiritual qi became dense right away. When he put them into the Space, the spiritual qi suddenly filled up the Space.

The Egg was so happy. It rushed back to the plate immediately. - Poof! - All the spiritual qi was drawn over to it. It was running even faster than earlier...

[Oh my god. That was not its peak speed? So it was trying to restrain it?]

Ye Xiao didn't dare to hesitate. He was so busy getting everything out from his space ring and putting them all into the Space. First, he put all the treasures he got from Ling-Bao Hall. The Spaces would sort them out automatically.

Now, even the Cosmic Hades was drained in a terrible rate. It looked weak and couldn't emit any cold qi anymore.

To be honest, Ye Xiao would really like to see the Cosmic Hades hang on for more rounds. [Please burst your energy out for a few more rounds and let Brother Egg get fed up. Why don't you burst now?]

[I guess you are the prick who bullies the weak and fears the strong. You burst your cold qi as you wish when you face me. Now when you face Brother Egg, you act just like a coward!]

Ye Xiao put a great amount of treasures into the Space to support the Egg. These were all great treasures with top quality. However, most of them were drained up and turned into ashes right after they got into the Space. The Egg really needed spiritual qi in an extreme level!

After all, the items Ye Xiao put into the Space were much better. The Egg was so happy after absorbing the spiritual qi this time. Ye Xiao could clearly feel the joy from the Egg.

He could also feel another feeling from the Egg.

Ye Xiao was terrified.

"Not... Not enough... More... I want more..."

Ye Xiao gritted his teeth. He then put all the resources he got from Ling Wuxie into the space at once!

That was an enormous amount of treasures. When he threw them into the Space, the Space was immediately filled up!

As the Egg kept crazily swallowing it, the Space was drained up

again soon. The materials were piled up like a huge mountain, but the mountain was falling down so fast.

Ye Xiao had put in whatever he had now. There was nothing more he could do. He could only wait and see what would happen next.

Only heavens knew whether it was enough or not.

As Ye Xiao estimated, the enormous amount of spiritual qi that burst in the Space within such a short time could burst him into explosion at once for over a hundred times, even when he was in his perfect status in the previous life!

That was conservative estimation!

Now that the enormous spiritual qi was all swallowed by the Egg.

With those it had already swallowed earlier...

Ye Xiao couldn't even imagine how much energy it needed to get the Egg hatch!

He couldn't imagine what a horrible powerful thing it would become after hatching!

Would it be something hundred times stronger than Xiao Monarch?

After a long time...

The Egg finally returned to peace.

The spiritual qi stopped moving anymore. The Egg must have had enough now.

It stayed on the plate silently again.

Ye Xiao saw it become stable, so he hurriedly entered those Spaces to check on the conditions. He felt terribly painful in heart when he saw what was in his sight.

First, the medical plants in the Wood Space were all down. Some of them even became ashes.

Some plant of high quality were seriously injured.

The leaves of the Tree of the Cultivating Tea were all hanging down.

The other Spaces also suffered great losses. The Heavenly Crystal Marrow was reduced one third. The Cosmic Hades looked dispirited. It didn't even have a big cold qi, not to mention a raging wave of cold qi.

It seemed it would take a long time for the Spaces to recover.

Ye Xiao was speechless.

He came over to the Egg again; looking at the egg, which was like a big fat huge watermelon, he said, "I mean, how long do you need to hatch?"

The Egg shook proudly.

It seemed very arrogant at the moment.

Ye Xiao was helpless facing such a proud Egg. All the anger in his chest vented out and became a helpless sigh.

He came to the plate and looked at the pile-up supreme dan beads. He felt like in a dream.

Every single dan bead in that pile was powerful enough to stir a huge wave outside. However, they just piled up there like a pile of trash! They were in all different levels!

He didn't plan to get so, yet truth forcibly gave him so!

[Wait! Is that...] When Ye Xiao noticed there were three dan beads shining with special glows, the expression on his face changed...

"No way!"

Ye Xiao slapped his leg!

[Isn't it... Isn't it Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan?]

Chapter 507: Puzzle; Awakened!

It was exactly what Master Bai needed. He was quite in a hurry earlier when Brother Egg was urgently in need of great amount of spiritual qi, so Ye Xiao put in all the things he could but it still was not enough. So he added in the materials Master Bai gave him to make the Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan beads.

In fact, no matter how splendid the Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan was, it required only ordinary materials. The reason why it could 'seize heaven' was that the materials it needed were in variety. All the materials work harmoniously with each other, being against each other. Those complex relations between each two materials were the reason why it was so powerful. In other words, it was to put all conflicting materials to work together, to make the impossible possible.

In fact, the materials were not so powerful.

Compared to what the Egg needed, those were normal and cheap materials for real!

In fact, when those medical materials entered the Space, they immediately became ashes because the Egg absorbed so hard! They didn't really offer much spiritual qi for the Egg!

It was an urgent situation, so Ye Xiao didn't have time to care about other things. If he didn't notice the Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan accidentally, he wouldn't realize that he had put in all those materials from Master Bai.

However, it worked out so well.

There were three Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan beads after all.

It was less than predicted, but it was much more than he had promised Master Bai.

However, Ye Xiao wouldn't be satisfied with only so.

Now that he had three Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan beads, he had perfect stunts now. He was planning to use the stunt to get more materials. Ninety-nine percent of the materials would come to his personal collection.

In fact, he would only need one percent of the materials he asked from Master Bai to make enough Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan beads.

To collect more materials was to do more preparation for himself and also for people around him.

It was better to take more advantages like this!

Although Ye Xiao wasn't the kind who would try everything to take advantage and he was not a selfish person, he would do whatever he could to get more supports for himself and for the people he cared for!

It was much more important to survive than to sacrifice for honor!

That was what he was doing to Master Bai and Ling Wuxie.

No matter whether Master Bai was a good guy or a bad guy, he was Ye Xiao's enemy after all. He had caused lots of murders and aroused lots of fights. Ye Xiao would never feel guilty in taking advantage of people like that!

Ling Wuxie seemed stupid, but he was definitely a man with loyalty. He was truly a nice man.

Ye Xiao honestly wanted to be friends with such a man, rather than enemies.

However, he had no choice on this.

First of all, Ling Wuxie was too powerful. He was in such a high position. Even if Ye Xiao wanted to make him a friend, Ling Wuxie might not be willing to accept it. Secondly, Ye Xiao had his own responsibility. He had something he had to insist. He still couldn't just let go of it and do whatever he wanted.

Under such circumstances, Ye Xiao could only choose to... protect the ones he cared for.

He had no time to consider other things.

However, there was still a long road ahead. He would wait and see what would happen in the future. Nobody knew what would things be like in the future anyway!

What he was doing now, for Ling Wuxie, was not fair or honest. However, it was kind and great for the people around Ye Xiao.

"We need such a friend. He is horrible for people in opposite position, but for friends and families, he is solid!"

"In enemy's eyes, he is devil, he is ghost, he is vile, he is disaster. But in our eyes, he is always the one we can trust and the one we can rely on forever. When we see him, we will smile sincerely!"

"In the martial world, he is the friend I want the most. He is never that kind of hero who cares too much about fame."

Every time when Ye Xiao thought of these words, he thought of one man.

That man was wearing white clothes like snow. He was proud like ice. His eyes were cold and profound like a deep pond. He stood straight like a sword!

[He is my brother!]

[When he said those words, I want to tell him that I am exactly such a friend like that to you!]

[After you died, brother, I fight against the world for you. I splashed blood to the entire Qing-Yun Realm! I fell down under the clouds for you!]

[I never regret it!]

"Master Bai has a royal friend, Ling Wuxie. I don't envy him. Because I have a brother too. Although you are dead... Death or life, brotherhood lives forever!"

"As long as I am still alive, you never died in my heart! Brotherhood never dies!"

Ye Xiao blandly smiled. He looked to the distance with profound eyes.

He took a few supreme dan beads and got out of the Space.

He didn't take the Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan beads though.

When he was about to leave, the Egg shook. It flew up and got close to Ye Xiao.

It stopped in the air, struggling, like it was trying to say something.

Ye Xiao frowned. He said with anger, "What more do you want now? You nearly wipe out all the spiritual qi in the Space this time. You put all my Spaces into a dead end this time! Do you understand? What pisses me off the most is that... You are still an egg after swallowing tons of great treasures! What the fxck... That is so annoying!"

Ye Xiao kept pushing Brother Egg with a finger. The Egg was shaking in the air; it was surely powerful enough to handle that. It had smashed a Dao Origin Stage cultivator into death once after all, so it wouldn't care about the weak power of Ye Xiao. Ye Xiao was just angry. He didn't know other ways to vent his anger, and he realized that he could do no harm to the Egg, so he freaked out and said, "What do you want? How on earth can I make you hatch? You may not feel anything, but I feel quite upset!"

The Egg shook. It seemed wronged.

[Please. Of course I want to hatch too. Who on earth wants me to hatch more than I do? None!]

[I just cannot hatch without enough conditions... What do you want me to do?]

It just wanted to tell Ye Xiao so. It didn't say it, because it couldn't. No matter how powerful it was, it was still an egg.

However, it transmitted the meaning quite well to Ye Xiao.

Ye Xiao could feel that he was not only understanding it, he was hearing it.

"What the... You crazy egg... You can speak?" Ye Xiao widely opened his eyes and looked at the huge egg which was as big as a watermelon.

[Of course not. Why?] The Egg used mind transmission.

This time, Ye Xiao clearly felt what it wanted to say. He felt surprised and happy about it.

"Oh my god! I can communicate with an egg! That is going to bring me more pain!" Ye Xiao laughed. The anger in his chest was all gone.

If the Egg had a face, there must be some dark lines on it. [Come on dude. I am trying so hard to communicate with you ok? What do you think you did? Pain? I truly feel the pain!]

"I mean... Egg... What do you need to hatch?" Ye Xiao asked.

He acted like he didn't know what the egg was complaining about earlier.

[Not anything special really. I just need more energy. I need much more energy...]

"Much more energy? Oh my god. How much? Fine. I get it. Hmm. What happened today? Did you know you are draining the Space for the energy? That is not good. Do you know how many great stuffs are ruined?"

Finally, he was able to talk to the Egg. He couldn't wait to complain, "Do you know how many great treasures those things could be exchanged for? Don't you think you should make it sustainable? You felt good swallowing all, but do you know how much trouble you brought to me?"

"Now the Spaces all stop working. There will be nothing produced in the Space for days. Supreme Dan beads wouldn't help. The sects love supreme dan beads indeed, but they have no more resources to trade them. You are... You are... You really..." Ye Xiao couldn't wait to scold the Egg.

[It was an accident. It truly was. A huge accident.] Brother Egg tried to explain, [Do you think I wanted that to happen? Of course I know it is bad to drain the pond to get the fish. Of course I want it to be sustainable... But...]

The Egg explained, [Today somebody has operated a special martial art to reach the nature's secret to solve the puzzle in universe. That secret should remain unsealed. Unluckily, I am part of that puzzle. I am helpless. I have to maintain the balance when I was awakened...]

"Puzzle? Awakened? Balance? What the hell are you talking

about? Do you know what you are talking about?" Ye Xiao was stunned.

Chapter 508: Wild Dragon Wind!

What kind of puzzle could awaken an egg that wasn't hatched?

[Aren't you an egg? You are maintaining a balance? Can you stop being so shameless?]

[And... you, an egg, talk so much... That is... unbelievable?]

[Is there anything more unbelievable than this?]

Brother Egg kept shaking. After a long talk with its mind transmission, it became weaker and weaker. [Peerless lord in the world... Foremost spirit in chaos... Two hosts in the universe; Thirteen spirits in chaos...]

"Come on chief, what are you talking about. You are making it disorderly..." Ye Xiao frowned, "That is such contradiction..."

At the moment, Brother Egg was losing its consciousness.

Apparently, it was running out of mind power.

Ye Xiao was freaking out. After all the efforts he did to communicate with the Egg, it was now going to end. How depressing!

"I mean, you have taken in so much spiritual qi. You ruined so

many good stuffs. And you are telling me you are going to quit after just a few words? Can you stop being such a prick? I haven't gotten the answer I want yet. Do you know how depressed I am now?"

The Egg was flying in the air. It had no reaction anymore.

While Ye Xiao was so disappointed and preparing to leave, the Egg suddenly shook. From the egg, a drop of milky liquid fell down.

After that, the Egg became so weak that it could be told with sight. The eggshell seemed turning pale. - Poof! - It flew back to the plate.

It steadfastly stood there!

The spiritual qi gathered again and started to rush to the Egg again.

Ye Xiao knew that the milky liquid was not anything ordinary. He reached out his hand to catch the liquid.

After a cool feeling in the hand, that liquid disappeared.

The next moment, Ye Xiao felt so good on his entire body.

He felt spirited up.

Even his soul power was enhanced a lot. There were waves in his dantian too. Some changes started to take place in his dantian.

"What is that?" Ye Xiao was confused. "Is this how you make up for me? Is it a gift?"

The Egg just stayed in the center of the plate in silence. It didn't talk or move.

Ye Xiao waited for a while. The Egg was still motionless. Ye Xiao didn't notice any changes on his own body too. He didn't hesitate anymore; he just went out the Space immediately.

He had just returned to the outside world. In the silent room, cold wind blew over to him. He heard a sound in his mind.

- Boom! -

A sudden sound of bell ringing resounded in his brain!

"Peerless lord in the world; foremost spirit in chaos!"

"Two hosts in the universe; thirteen spirits in chaos; a bet of the world..."

The sound stopped right there. It was still resounding in his head. It was still the same content.

Ye Xiao felt that he got to learn something from it. He thought deeper of it, but only realized he didn't feel anything...

He murmured, "A bet of the world? What to bet? How?..."

The sound was gone. It became silent.

Everything came down to peace.

Ye Xiao shook his head. He thought so hard with frowned eyes, murmuring, "Bet? Am I one of the person who will bet? Who do I bet with?"

He laughed and murmured, "I never bet!"

He finally walked out.

...

At the same time, in the forest, Master Bai was partly recovered. He left Ling Wuxie's arms and looked at Ling Wuxie. He frowned, looking sad and depressed. He said, "If I am the one who bet, who would join me?"

Ling Wuxie was confused. "What? You are the one? Are you insane? Are you seriously so depressed and you want to play casino? You don't look like a man who is too weak to handle the

strikes!"

Master Bai helplessly sighed.

"If I make a bet, who in the world dare to join?"

And then he sighed to the sky.

...

In the sunny sky, wind was blowing casually. Everything seemed peaceful.

However, a huge change was taking place in such peace. An unbelievable change!

The dark clouds gathered together in a wild speed. The comfortable breeze suddenly became wild wind, howling in the sky! - Hoooh! - All the flags on the walls around Chen-Xing City were flying.

After a while, all the trees inside and outside the city were bent down!

They were all bent by the wild wind!

That wasn't ordinary wind though. The trees on the west bent to

the west; trees on the east bent to the east; trees on the north bent to the north; and trees on the south bent to the south...

All in all, the wind got to them from the center of the city. All the trees were bent!

That was impossible to happen. It was simply against the nature's rule. However, it did happen!

Nobody noticed this, because all the people, strong or weak, here or there, all closed their eyes because the wind was too strong.

They saw nothing.

Sand and rocks were flying along the wild wind. It was difficult to see in the distance.

A huge cyclone was formed!

At the moment when it was formed...

It rushed up to the sky!

The sky was covered by sand and smoke. - Boom! - A cyclone appeared like a long dragon! What a cyclone!

The dragon was so vivid. It had all the flakes on its body. Its eyes

were dark and profound. It was nearly thousands of meters long, rolling up in the sky!

Behind the dragon, the undependable and overwhelming wild wind was running after it too.

When the wind started to howl, Ling Wuxie noticed something wrong. He jumped up high and tried to figure out what was happening. However, before he jumped high enough, the dragon swayed the tail and hit Ling Wuxie to the floor.

He fell down in front of Master Bai.

It hit him so hard that his bones were injured. He lied on the ground, unable to move even a little. Well, he could move his eyes though. He was still alive!

Master Bai was shocked!

Ling Wuxie was a completely invincible figure in this world... It was even insulting him to call him No. 1 cultivator or anything in this world! As long as he wanted, he could destroy the entire Land of Han-Yang by waving his hand!

For the Land of Han-Yang, Ling Wuxie was stronger than gods, higher than the sky!

However, right now, this super power was instantly knocked down by a wind!

He didn't even have a chance to defend it. That was fast and hard. A clear knock out!

How powerful was that wind?

If this wind could knock out Ling Wuxie with one hit, it must be quite easy for the wind to destroy the entire Land of Han-Yang. However, it had been blowing for a long time, but such invincible wind didn't do any harm to normal people, buildings, and plants!

Why?

Master Bai sat there while looking Ling Wuxie lying on the ground. Master Bai, the calm and steady one, or Ling Wuxie, the vivacious one, they both stared at the wild wind. Their faces were turning darker and darker.

"The power of the universe! The true power of the universe!"

Master Bai murmured. As he just spoke, the sound was blown away.

In the sky.

The wind turned into a giant dragon. It was swaying, rolling up thousands meters long... It kept rolling up, blowing, howling... Under the dragon, dark clouds covered the entire sky.

The dragon head was above the dark clouds, and the dragon tail was still below.

After a while, the giant dragon turned down and reached its head down. It nodded three times to the Chen-Xing City.

That seemed to be... salute? Showing respect?

It rushed up from the earth and then disappeared in the void sky.

At the moment, heavy rain storm started in the world! It could almost drown the entire land!

Within seconds, the entire Land of Han-Yang became a world of waters!

Countless lightnings were striking between sky and earth like crazy!

- Boom! -

- Boom! -

- Crack! -

- Crack! -

At the same time, while endless lightnings were in the sky, it formed some words upon the dark clouds!

The words kept falling down!

They became lightnings too.

‘Two hosts in the sky!’

’Two hosts make a bet!’

‘Equal shares of power!’

‘Who is the winner!’

‘Great worlds for each!’

‘Dragon and tigers for each!’

‘Equal shares in one year!’

‘Of twelve months of the tree!’

‘Two seasons after!’

‘Universe gets sealed!’

...

One after another, the words formed and fell down from the sky.
It kept falling, falling and falling...

Chapter 509: Universe Sealed!

The entire land was shaking under the awe of the lightnings...

Master Bai and Ling Wuxie were really powerful in cultivation; after all, they were both beyond the limitation of this world. They stared at the lightnings, dauntless, but still, they were splashed thoroughly wet.

They just stood there, without saying anything.

Words of the Nature's Secret came down from the heavens.

There was no sound for it, but they both knew what was happening.

"The universe gets sealed after half a year?"

Master Bai and Ling Wuxie were both shocked.

That meant they only had half a year left!

If they didn't go back to Human Realm Upon Heavens in half a year, they would have to stay here forever!

[... If we can't return up there, it means our lives are wasted!]

When the universe gets sealed, it wasn't just simply blocking the tunnels between realms. In fact, all different ways to go and come between two realms would be cut. Tunnels that were already there for two realms transportation, or the temporary tunnel that could be created by huge energy burst were all blocked!

More than that, if somebody who was from a higher realm or those whose power was beyond the limitation of the realm stayed in a low realm, he would be killed right away by the heaven's nature!

Master Bai, Wan-Er and Xiu-Er were all these people. Moreover, if Gu Jinlong was alive, if Purple Lotus Saint was hiding in this world, Bing Xinyue who was staying in this world for her disciple or for Feng Zhiling, Ye Nantian, Wenren Chuchu, natives who had been living here for a long time, even Song Jue, who wasn't that strong but should be beyond the limitation, were all bound to be sealed!

All in all, when the universe was sealed, nobody could escape the punishment.

Master Bai, Ling Wuxie, Wan of the Clouds and Xiu of the Heavens, they only had half a year in this world.

Half a year!

The last period of time!

Was it long enough for them?

Bai Chen and Ling Wuxie looked at each other. They could only find solemnity in each other's face.

Even if Bai Chen was usually calm and steady, even if Ling Wuxie had always shown a wicked attitude, they were both solemn now!

They could only depend on Feng Monarch now.

Only when Feng Monarch could make enough Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan beads could they talk about future, hope and plans.

But could he make it in time?

He might be able to make one or two beads, but could he make enough for all these people before it was too late?

Could he do it?

Nobody could be sure!

Time was a sharp knife!

When nothing serious was happening, thousands of years of life was like clicking the fingers. When a serious event befalls one's life, it felt so hard to live for even one more second!

...

There was surprise and there was happiness. Ye Xiao didn't know whether to laugh or to cry.

Out there in the main hall.

There were three guys sitting there casually drinking tea.

Ning Biluo, Zhao Pingtian, Liu Changjun.

The three famous assassins casually sat in the room.

If anybody who knew the assassin ranking list saw this scene, he wouldn't believe his own eyes!

There must be something serious happening if these three fellas were sitting together waiting for the same guy!

After all, if they were waiting for Feng Monarch of Ling-Bao Hall, that was a different story!

After a long night of killings, the three assassins had been through a special experience!

When they were fighting back in Ling-Bao Hall, they truly felt

suppressed. They felt like being surrounded by wolves in the wild, they felt like dangling on the edge of a cliff, and they felt like they would fall down and turned into pieces at any second!

That was a short fight, but it felt so long. It was an unforgettable battle in their hearts!

When they went to the Royal House to help, they kept killing for the remainder of the night. That felt easier though.

First, things were mostly settled. Second, it was in the Kingdom of Chen, so they had many more people. Third, they wouldn't need to fight that hard. Fourth, when people in the enemies' group knew who they really were, they panicked. The three of them didn't want to kill too many, so most of the enemies just ran away!

The reason was simple—they were famous for their horrible titles. The enemies knew that they could never defeat them. Furthermore, they knew these three were people of Ling-Bao Hall. Now that they knew what Ling-Bao Hall would do to whoever hurt their people, they didn't even want to try messing with Ling-Bao Hall's people.

As long as the three assassins didn't make a killing strike, nobody dared to make the killing strike either. Whoever accidentally killed Ling-Bao Hall's man, he would die very soon. The only way to survive this was to run away!

In fact, not only the three leaders, but also all the other assassins remained unharmed. They met some resistance when they first

arrived, but when their identities were revealed, the enemies just kept running away.

That was totally an easy fight...

Ye Xiao came out, then the three of them stood up.

"Mission completed luckily!"

"Great job." Ye Xiao smiled. "You three stay here for the next few days. Do not hang out around too much. Focus on your own martial art. You can discuss with each other on how to improve yourselves. Get on with the new martial art as soon as possible and make good use of it."

When Ye Xiao said so, he was looking at Ning Biluo.

Only Ning Biluo was always missing among the three guys. He didn't stay in Ling-Bao Hall all the time. Liu Changjun was staying; one couldn't even punch him away.

Zhao Pingtian was putting all his hope on Ye Xiao. Five days later, it was the fifteenth July—spirits and living people reunion. If possible, he wouldn't even want to leave Ye Xiao for one second.

However, it was so disturbing for Ye Xiao after all. It was so hard for a man to be followed all the time by another man. It felt terrible even just imagining it. Zhao Pingtian understood, so he just stayed in Ling-Bao Hall like Liu Changjun!

Ning Biluo smiled unnaturally. He embarrassedly said, "Don't worry, Monarch. I will seize the opportunity to study hard on my new martial art. I will never leave this place. Not even if I have to die."

The others started to laugh when they heard it.

They could never imagine that the world's No. 1 Assassin could actually be so shy!

...

Chapter 510: Tooth for Tooth!

Zhao Pingtian was in high spirits. To practice with Ning Biluo was his dream in life, and now he finally got a chance to fulfill it. He just wanted to jubilate!

Liu Changjun was even more excited; practicing with his two idols, just how much could his strength be improved? Even though he wouldn't be as strong as them, he thought he could at least try to get beyond Boundless Saint!

"About the five clans. We have solved the most powerful enemy for them already. Just let Wan Zhenghao deal with the issues afterwards. We can't let them freely take the advantage."

Ye Xiao's eyes flashed with cold light. He said, "Let them think about how to return the favor to us. If I am not satisfied with what they offer... I think they know the consequence. I don't think we need to emphasize it."

The three assassins said yes at the same time.

While they were talking, Wan Zhenghao came in with heavy steps. "Monarch."

"Hmm. Here you are." Ye Xiao nodded. "I was just about to look for you. I won't repeat the words I said. There is something else I want to say now."

"Monarch, are you going to talk about the bounty?" Wan Zhenghao's eyes lit up.

"That's right. The bounty." Cold lights shined in Ye Xiao's eyes as he said, "This time, I want the entire world to know about the power of our wealth! Money can be much stronger than any powerful cultivators in the world. It can drive ghost and also gods. That is not just some old saying."

Wan Zhenghao laughed. "I really like it. To be honest, I always want to do this. I just couldn't make up my mind."

Ye Xiao blandly smiled. "I want to do it this way for the bounty issue."

He slowly paced while saying, "This time, we are going to aim at those who have hurt Ling-Bao Hall with whatever we can afford! Wan Zhenghao, what price do you think we should make?"

Wan Zhenghao hesitated.

He was just a businessman—in fact, the biggest businessman in the world—but the resistance for giving away money was always sticking in his heart. That was his instinct.

"This time, we will only do it to terrify everyone. If we do it right, for the coming thousands of years, there will be no one who would dare to look down upon you! Not to mention... assassinate or put a bounty on you." Ye Xiao tried to persuade him.

Wan Zhenghao feared death the most. A fever hit his heart as he said, "Right. So be it. Let's make it huge."

Ye Xiao said, "Hmm? How much do you want to make it?"

Wan Zhenghao was being excited. "I am not good at anything else, but I am quite good at using money. How much do you want me to put on it, Monarch?"

Ye Xiao half closed the eyes and smiled. "How about a trillion?"

Wan Zhenghao was stunned. He then sat on the floor all of a sudden, causing the entire room to shake. That was out of expectation. Boss Wan's fat face turned pale, his eyes were like two huge balls. The price Feng Monarch gave really frightened Boss Wan.

"That... That... Isn't that too much? I don't have that much money..." Wan Zhenghao was scared his face turned pale.

"You have run the business for so many years. How come you don't even have such a small amount of money?" Ye Xiao was surprised.

[Small amount of... money?]

[Small?]

Wan Zhenghao's face was twitching and twitching.

He really couldn't understand how Feng Monarch could describe that amount "small" while not feeling embarrassed at all.

[Oh my god. Why don't you strike down a thunder to hit this big-mouth shameless guy!]

Not only Wan Zhenghao, this time, even Ning Biluo, Zhao Pingtian and Liu Changjun kept their mouths opened widely!

One trillion silver!

Such amount of silver could be piled up to make a castle already.

In Feng Monarch's words, it was just a small amount of money!

He was sneering. That made it even worse! It could easily drive them crazy!

"Monarch... That is unbelievably a terribly huge amount... Monarch!" Wan Zhenghao wanted to cry. "I am not you. I can't make supreme dan beads... I can't make poison beads..."

Ye Xiao frowned. "Cut that sh*t. I just told you. No matter what, we have to let the entire martial world boil! I will give the world a lesson of blood and make them stay humble in front of us from

now on! To reach this goal, we have to do it this way!"

Wan Zhenghao sighed. "But I... I don't have that much money."

When he said so, he didn't sound unwilling. Instead, he sounded ashamed.

[Gosh. I have been working so hard for so many years, I have been famous in this world for so many years, but now I don't even have one trillion... How poor...]

"Even if I take out all I have, it will be no more than half that number. I really just have this much."

That was five hundred billion!

In this world, only Wan Zhenghao had such a number. There was no one else. When he said he had this much money, he sounded ashamed.

Surely, what he got from Feng Monarch was a supercilious look. "Useless."

Wan Zhenghao was ashamed.

Ning Biluo, Zhao Pingtian and Liu Changjun were stunned.

"Well then, since you don't have enough money, we can only lower the standard..." Ye Xiao said. He didn't notice the other four guys were stunned.

[Not enough money... Lower the standard!]

[That was some pretentious saying really!]

"So be it then. At least thirty million for one head! I want this news to get spread in the martial world tonight!"

"This time, we are going to get ten thousand heads!"

"Go get on to it now!"

Thirty million for one head! Three hundred million for ten; three billion for a hundred; thirty billion for a thousand; and three hundred billion for ten thousand!

That was the lowest price!

There were some over thirty million bounty guys... Apparently, Feng Monarch planned to use up all the five hundred billion of Wan Zhenghao at one time!

"They use money to get our heads. Fine. We use money to smash them to death!"

Ye Xiao fiercely spoke.

Wan Zhenghao was trembling.

He could clearly feel that from now on, he would become the poorest man in the world from being the richest...

Five hundred billion was all used for lives!

All Wan Zhenghao had gotten within three thousand years was used to set the bounty!

"So much money... all gone..." Wan Zhenghao spoke.

"Don't feel pain in it. No need." Ye Xiao humphed and said, "I promise you. Less than one year after today, you will get every penny back. You will get more than you have now. From now on, nobody dares to mess with you anymore!"

...

Chapter 511: Now I Will Leave!

Wan Zhenghao cheered up when he heard Feng Monarch. "Really?"

"Have I ever lied to you?" Ye Xiao looked at him.

"No... Okay! Let's do it!"

Wan Zhenghao's fat face was shaking as his eyes turned fierce. He had had enough of those who always treated him as a big fat meat on the plate...

This time, since the Monarch had made the decision, he would love to get on with it and give a real fight!

"Of course, we need strategy on this. You four should discuss more about it... Those that would take a huge bounty... Just let Ning, Zhao or Liu to kill them. It will save us some money and it will be safer. Those that are less important, we can let our assassins go hunt them down. That would save us a certain amount... It is always better to let our own man get our money..."

Ye Xiao gave a lesson to them. "Do not be too honest in this cruel world... When you need to scheme, do it... It can bring better advertising and get more people to join our bounty hunt. However, we have to keep it carefully done. Don't leave any trace."

Wan Zhenghao's eyes lit up brighter. "Right. That is right. Right,

right, right..."

"You four go on and discuss about the details. Remember, make it safe, make it work. I have other things to do now. I will leave you."

"Remember, we must get this done before tonight. Within one night, I want the entire martial world to know about it!"

Ye Xiao finished talking and nodded. He casually walked out of Ling-Bao Hall.

The four that were left behind immediately began their discussion.

Wan Zhenghao became a legendary businessman right away. He talked and talked...

The three assassins were solemn. They listened so carefully and gave advices from time to time...

Apparently, about this horrible, huge and crazy plan, the three assassins were happy to join in...

...

Ye Xiao had just walked out Ling-Bao Hall when he saw a lady standing there quietly with white clothes. She was in perfect shape, and her hair was pretty like clouds. She was standing on the

ground, but she looked like standing in the sky, as if she would be blown away by the wind at any second.

She was full of mysterious beauty.

Her clear eyes had locked on Ye Xiao when he just showed up.

Bing Xinyue!

Bing Xinyue's eyes were filled with some complex emotions at this moment...

She looked calm and peaceful, like an ancient well with quiet water. When Ye Xiao walked out, she finally showed a smile.

"Feng Monarch." Bing Xinyue slightly bowed. Her white clothes fluttered in the wind as she smiled sweetly. "I am embarrassed. I didn't help you, instead you saved my life again. It is useless to say thank you, but I still have to express my gratitude."

Ye Xiao didn't know what to respond all of a sudden.

The lady had nearly sacrificed everything she had to stop Xiu of the Heavens for him. She was willing to give up her life, her family, and her people for him. Besides, she didn't even want him to know, success or not.

Normally, the House of the Chaotic Storms would definitely wipe

out all the force Bing Xinyue was relevant to!

Before she met Feng Zhiling, she cherished her sect the most.

What made her do such a reckless thing? Was it really... just to return the favor to Feng Monarch?

She knew she had given too much, yet now she was still here to say thank you to Feng Monarch.

Ye Xiao really didn't know what to respond with!

He could only feel the complexity in his heart.

"I should thank you for what you did this time." Ye Xiao sighed and said, "But, why bother?"

A simple question made her eyes moistened. There seemed to be fog in the eyes.

[Why bother?]

[How do I know? I knew I wouldn't be able to bear the result, but I still did it for you.]

[I did it without regrets!]

[Even till now, I still have no idea how to express my feeling. The only word I am sure to say is thank you!]

[Is it strange?]

[Is it ought to be like this?]

[Is god fooling me? No!]

"I was trying to return the favor to you, Feng Monarch, for what you have done to save my life. But I never expected that I would owe you once more. Heaven's will is unpredictable indeed."

Bing Xinyue was casual, peaceful and soft. "I owe you more and more. I really don't know if I can return it all to you."

Ye Xiao said with a deep voice, "No need. We are friends. Friends help each other. Never mention returning anymore!"

"Friends..." Bing Xinyue thought for a while and smiled. "Yes. We are friends. Well then, I shall be shameless to accept your kind heart. Haha."

Ye Xiao nodded. "That is right. We are friends. I hope you can live a happy, healthy and easy life. I don't wish for more as return."

Bing Xinyue lowered her eyelids and softly spoke, "It is such a

comfort that I can have a friend like Feng Monarch in my life. Feng Monarch, I am here to say good bye."

"Say goodbye? Why?" Ye Xiao asked.

"I am going back to the Qing-Yun Realm." Bing Xinyue said, "Land of Han-Yang, this mortal realm, I don't fit in anymore. I need to go back. I need to protect my sect. I should stay there where I belong. That is where my fate assigned me to."

Ye Xiao stayed silent for a while and then he said, "Can you stay for two more days? There is still some impurities in your body. I only need two days to get it done thoroughly. You will get much improved and will never be bothered by it."

"No need." Bing Xinyue smiled. "I am satisfied with my current condition. At least, I can live for another hundreds of years. The rest of the wounds, I guess I will just keep them. It won't affect me further anyway. To be improved or not, it means the same to me..."

Ye Xiao was silent again.

To stay the same or to improve would surely make a huge difference. If the rest of the wounds could be removed, she would have a bright and smooth future. If not, she would only have hundreds more years to live. However, if she got any progress in martial art, that impurity would get back and arouse a huge explosion power. It would either hurt her slightly or kill her with explosion! That was a huge difference!

Ye Xiao understood that Bing Xinyue didn't want to owe him more. She didn't want to be touched by Ye Xiao anymore. That was why she gave up the opportunity!

Ye Xiao didn't know that behind the smile on Bing Xinyue's face, there was massive pain.

[Wounds?]

[If it gets all wiped out, I may forget you, forget the story between you and me.]

[If I let it stay in me, when it brings me pain again, even though it hurts, it will remind me the days with you!]

[I don't want to forget. I won't forget. That beautiful memory!]

...

Chapter 512: Long Story!

"Feng Monarch, if I am lucky, maybe we can meet in the Qing-Yun Realm someday." Bing Xinyue turned around, then she walked further and further with her clothes flying. "When you rush up to the Qing-Yun Realm, let's talk about the promise... If destiny doesn't allow it, never mind."

She didn't wait for Ye Xiao's answer. She just left. Within seconds, she had long vanished into the sky.

[To know that you have gotten through this crisis, I feel happy about it.]

[I feel especially relieved.]

[I have nothing to worry about in here.]

[There will never be anybody in this world who can threaten you after this crisis, I think.]

[Me and Chuchu, we never can see your true face. I won't wait though.]

[So be it.]

[Since destiny gave us the chance to meet, why don't we leave the future to destiny and see if it will bring us together again. If we will

never meet, that means it is not our destiny!]

As her clothes fluttered in the wind, the lady got further and further away. She didn't look back.

Ye Xiao looked at her. When she was about to disappear, he couldn't help murmuring, "Take care. We will meet in the Qing-Yun Realm."

Bing Xinyue heard it.

She shook and then suddenly moved faster. - Shoot! - She disappeared from his sight.

Seeing her off, Ye Xiao felt a bit depressed. There was also some strange feeling growing in his heart. He seemed to sense the sorrow and the unwillingness.

He shook his head and sighed in his heart. Should he give such a promise to her now? Was it right? Should he do it?

He then moved fast and disappeared too.

...

In the House of Ye.

Ye Xiao had removed his disguise. He just got home and felt some sword breaths rushing to the sky. Song Jue was shouting with a weird voice.

"That's weird! That's impossible! How can it be!"

"What is going on?"

"This is impossible, unbelievable, incredible... absurd..."

"Ah... How did I... Damn it..."

"Incredibly unbelievable..."

[What happened to Uncle Song? Did I remove all the wounds in him? Why is he exclaiming like this?]

Ye Xiao was confused. He walked faster over to see what was going on.

When he saw what was happening, he was truly stunned.

He was so shocked that his jaw nearly fell to the floor when he saw what he saw.

Bing-Er was holding a sword while fighting against Song Jue. That wasn't so surprising. The weird thing was that they were

equal in the match!

Bing-Er was even slightly occupying the higher position!

After just a few days, Song Jue was greatly improved. Hmmm... In fact, he had recovered a lot; he was almost as powerful as he used to be. Originally, he was beyond the cultivation limitation of this realm. He was now in Spirit Origin Stage, very close to Dream Origin Stage. It would only take him a period of time in order for him to recover to Dream Origin Stage.

When he was fighting against Bing-Er, he tried to suppress his true power.

However, it wasn't a clever move. In fact, it was a foolish move.

He was wrong about Bing-Er's capability. He adjusted the power he used time after time, but he kept making wrong decisions.

"Wrong again. Impossible! What is going on!"

"Monster! She is a little monster! The longer she fights, the stronger she gets..."

"Ohhh... Wrong again..."

Song Jue moved here and there while trying so hard to dodge. Bing-Er swayed her sword, relentlessly attacking her opponent.

Song Jue moved round and round to get away from her strikes; with the current situation, he was obviously losing the battle.

Ye Xiao's mouth was widely opened like a huge ball.

[What... What is going on here? Bing-Er is suppressing Song Jue in a fight?]

Song Jue was a good fighter, not to mention he had almost recovered the peak of his strength. He had been through lots of battles and fights, with insurmountable experience and numerous skills. Bing-Er, on the other hand, had only practiced fighting for just a few days. She was simply blank in fighting experience, so he should have never fallen to the lower position in a fight against her! That was unbelievable!

That was against the rule of science, if we talked in modern language!

Bing-Er's sword moved, with some of them moving like ghosts. Ye Xiao had taught her some sword moves, but definitely not like these...

Bing-Er actually improved the sword moves herself!

Ye Xiao was stunned!

[What the hell is going on?]

"Master!" Bing-Er cheered and quit the fight as soon as she saw Ye Xiao. She left the fighting area and got over to Ye Xiao. Apparently, she wanted to rush into Ye Xiao's arms right away.

When she was close enough and Ye Xiao opened his arms in preparation to hold her, the little girl stopped with a blushed face. She looked at Ye Xiao with a pair of sentimental eyes. "You are back..."

Ye Xiao's arms were opened, and he didn't know how to react all of a sudden. He answered, "Yes, I am... Girl, why did you stop? Why don't you just come and hug me?"

[You ran over to me, so I prepared to hug you. Now I am opening my arms, yet you stopped...]

[What is it?]

[Fooling me around?]

"Humph..." Bing-Er blushed as she said, "Body contact should be avoided between man and woman... Master, you should know it. I thought you did."

At this moment, Ye Xiao's usually shameless face blushed; he felt like weeping.

[Oh my god. I guess I have taught her too well. What a fast learner.]

[One will always suffer in one's own sin!]

[One month ago, she would run to my bed naked, but now, she wouldn't even hug me...]

Song Jue was gasping. He walked over, looking at Bing-Er like he was looking at a ghost. "Xiaoxiao, this girl... Is she a monster?"

Bing-Er twitched her lips. "Uncle Song, what are you talking about! You are the monster!"

Song Jue was upset. "Well I would love to be the monster! I can't! I am not good enough to be."

"Uncle Song, wait a second. Tell me what is going on?" Ye Xiao asked, "Why did you two get in a fight? Such a drastic fight!"

Song Jue sighed before talking. He looked so upset. "That is a long story..."

...

Chapter 513: Totally Freaked Out!

In the morning, the little girl was practicing sword moves in the yard like usual. Song Jue's wounds were all removed, so he wanted to have a fight. He thought the girl was just normal, so he decided to test her and see how the girl was getting along.

He thought he could teach her something.

Bing-Er was happy to do it.

She had been practicing alone all the time, and now that she had a person to practice with, not to mention she could fight as she wished because she thought Song Jue was that strong, she immediately agreed!

However, Song Jue didn't teach Bing-Er anything. He was pushed and kicked from beginning to end.

At the beginning, Song Jue limited himself in level four of Human Origin Stage. He thought that the girl must be so weak as she had only learned for a couple of days. She looked well, and she seemed to be making progress, but he should be much stronger than her anyway. Besides, he was so experienced in fights. The girl didn't have a chance to win!

Well, the first strike from the girl nearly cut his hairs off...

Song Jue raised the limit to level five of Human Origin Stage...

And he was beaten down by one hit again...

His sleeve was cut off. That was worse than the first.

He couldn't believe it, so he just raised it to level six...

"I would never think that this lady would make such a horribly huge progress after only a few days of practice... Most annoyingly..." Song Jue gritted his teeth as he continued, "This girl... Damn it! When I told her I would limit my cultivation to level four of Human Origin Stage, she was happy to agree. That is why I didn't notice that she would limit her cultivation too. She intentionally made it one level higher than me..."

"When I raised it to level five, I thought it should be okay. It turns out she had raised it up to level six... I thought she was making a desperate strike... So if I raised it up one more level, I would be able to suppress her in all aspects. I never expected that she would raise her level too. Every time I raised it, she raised it! I thought so hard trying to figure out the reason, it turns out the reason was simple. She has never shown her true power during the fight at all..."

Song Jue looked so screwed. "I am obviously much more powerful than her, but I have been suppressed all along!"

Ye Xiao was shocked. "How is that possible? So you were being punched all along? Till when? That... That is... unbelievable..."

Song Jue sighed. "Why do you think I called her a monster? A girl who had only cultivated martial art for one month... She would already be a genius if she can reach level one of Human Origin Stage... I never knew that she is actually a monster... I kept raising my level to level nine of Human Origin Stage, but I was still beaten up..."

Ye Xiao was stunned, "Then what?"

Song Jue said, "Then you came back. I truly have no idea how much this girl has been hiding..."

Ye Xiao coughed. "I see. So Uncle Song, you have been suppressed for the entire morning, and you weren't even able to touch her?"

Song Jue was embarrassed. Truth was truth. He didn't want to lie about it. He heavily sighed and said, "If you come back later, I can definitely defeat her."

Bing-Er raised up her head and humphed. She seemed disdainful. That was it. Disdainful.

Ye Xiao sighed with sympathy. "Uncle Song, if you want to test her true power, start with level two of Earth Origin Stage. It will be better for both you and her."

"Earth Origin Stage? Level two?" Song Jue was shocked.

Ye Xiao was actually telling Song Jue something. The girl was dissatisfied. She muttered, "Who allowed you to say it. Who gives you the permission..." And then she spoke quietly beside Ye Xiao's ear proudly, "Even if he fights in level two, he will be defeated again. I am already level four now..."

Ye Xiao was shocked again.

[What the hell? Isn't it too fast?!]

[Maybe Song Jue is right. This girl is a monster!]

"How did she manage to do so..." Song Jue couldn't believe it. He said, "How can it be so fast? Is she sick?"

"You are sick!"

Ye Xiao and Bing-Er responded together. They both rolled up their eyes on Song Jue.

"Is there actually such a talented person in the world? Am I being ignorant?"

Song Jue was upset as he murmured.

Back in the Qing-Yun Realm, there were many talented men who continued to shock the world. There were countless of stories about those men, however, none of them had improved in

cultivation as fast like this. They were also much stronger than Bing-Er when they were in the same age...

However, their ablution started when they were just babies!

When they were the same age with Bing-Er, they had already cultivated for sixteen years!

They had lots of superior cultivators as their guides, not to mention endless dan beads to support their cultivation. Bing-Er never had such things; in fact, she might never see such things in her life!

Bing-Er had just cultivated herself in the yard for less than two months!

And she was now... in Earth Origin Stage!

All those in the martial world would be shocked by such progress!

Song Jue was stunned. His recognition had been changed completely...

"Bing-Er, what is it with your sword moves?" Ye Xiao frowned. He was confused, "I think this is not what I taught you..."

Bing-Er looked worried. "Master, did I make mistakes?"

"No, you didn't. It is just... It has a different power..." Ye Xiao was confused. "Did anyone teach you so?"

"No..." The girl was terrified. "After you taught me, I was trying to follow your lessons. But when I was doing it, I felt it might be better to do it this way... So I tried to change it. While I was practicing, Uncle Song came to me..."

[Change it?]

Ye Xiao totally lost it.

What Ye Xiao taught Bing-Er was a sword art that was nearly invincible in Qing-Yun Realm. It was so powerful, but it was always used by men...

After Bing-Er made some changes, it became more yin attributed, feminine in fact. Besides, it became sharper and fiercer... more unlikely to be defended...

This sword art had been passed down for millions of years. There had been so many great people who had made good changes to it. It was almost perfect after all flaws were basically removed.

Any reckless small change would make it much less powerful in practice! It was close to impossible to make it stronger by changing something in it.

However... Bing-Er just did it.

It was a success.

I seemed... the girl herself didn't even know what she had done—she didn't know how she casually made a great thing in history. She was terrified, like she had done something wrong...

Ye Xiao was freaking out.

Song Jue immediately exclaimed, "What kind of monster are you..."

Uncle Song totally lost it. He murmured with confusion in his eyes, "That... Is this still the world I know? Oh my god..."

...

Chapter 514: Flunky!

"My lord, Second Prince came for a visit." A guard came in to report.

"Second Prince?" Ye Xiao frowned. He didn't get it.

[What does he want in this particular time?]

[The superior cultivators of the eight noble clans should have all been killed right now, yet he didn't even moan for them and get credit for his kindness. Why? Why did he come here?]

[The entire capital is in holes... Yet he comes to me?]

[That is unreasonable!]

Ye Xiao was confused. While he was lost in thoughts, it was too late to send Bing-Er back into the room.

That was a prince after all. In a house which belonged to a foppish useless young lord, Ye Xiao, without General Ye in it, the Second Prince just broke in.

The guards might not fear him, but they couldn't stop him.

"Lord Ye, heh, heh, heh. It has been a long time." Second Prince's voice sounded. There seemed to be no sadness in his voice, but

instead, he seemed relieved for those men who died.

Ye Xiao frowned as his face turned dark.

Since Brother Egg gave Ye Xiao that milky liquid, Ye Xiao always felt that there was another special stream of energy running in his body.

It kept running and pumping. He could feel the anxiety in it.

Once it burst out, Ye Xiao was not sure if he could control it. When he finished giving orders in Ling-Bao Hall, he headed back home right away. He wanted to stay calm and cultivate martial art at home to digest that liquid. He believed the East-rising Purple Qi could, in some way, digest this special power, or at least suppress the negative effects from it.

At this special moment, Second Prince broke in without his permission. He acted like this yard was one of his gardens that he could come and go as he wished. Ye Xiao felt much more anxious when this happened in front of him. He felt it harder to control himself.

Suddenly, his head was filled with intent to kill somebody.

He forcibly suppressed it down though.

To kill somebody because he got in the house without permission was too violent. It must be the anxiety in his heart driving him...

"Second Prince, your honor. You brighten my house. We are flattered." Ye Xiao blandly spoke, "What is it bothers you to come today?"

However, no response was given to him.

Ye Xiao looked at the Second Prince and the two men with him. The three of them all looked beside Ye Xiao like fools.

Hmm. They were looking over to Ye Xiao's side, but not at Ye Xiao... at the person beside Ye Xiao!

Ye Xiao looked aside and found Bing-Er hiding behind him with a blushed face.

Bing-Er had an unbelievably pretty face; all men in the mortal world would certainly fall down under her feet once they saw her face.

Apparently, this prince was exactly one of them.

Song Jue knew that there was something big going to happen. He looked at Ye Xiao's face—it looked exactly like a face before losing control...

Song Jue sighed.

[Why on earth so many people wants to die in this world?]

"Second Prince!" Ye Xiao emphasized it. Apparently, he was trying to drag the prince back to the conversation.

It worked. The prince returned to himself. He felt awkward somehow, so he laughed before saying, "It has been a while. Lord Ye, you are still handsome and elegant. You look well, and you seem taller... And you are beaming... Hahaha..."

Ye Xiao's face was dark. He was on the edge of losing control. [What the hell is that? I don't think that is proper compliment. What beaming?] Apparently, the prince was trying not to be so awkward, so he casually said something he could think of.

"Hmm. I wonder what you are here for? Please do tell me, your honor!" Ye Xiao asked with a solemn face.

The prince became normal again. He frowned when he heard Ye Xiao's question.

People beside him had followed him for a long time. They knew exactly what the prince wanted now.

They had done this so many times.

When Second Prince liked a girl, he wouldn't need to say it. The flunkies beside him would do the dirty work for him!

Behind the prince, one man stepped forward. He pointed at Ye Xiao fiercely spoke, "How dare you, Ye Xiao! Is this how you talk to the prince?"

The man was called Wang Zhong. He was the most trusted man around Second Prince.

All those dirty things Second Prince wanted to do were done by this man. Now he stepped out and shouted, and apparently, he was trying to make new contributions.

Ye Xiao's eyes turned cold. He stared at that man and blandly said, "What? Second Prince, are you here only to make some trouble for me? To show off in my place?"

The prince wasn't here to make troubles.

He was here for an important purpose.

The three clans that supported the three princes were all broken down by the two great sects. Many of their men died, so the princes were back to an equal situation now.

That was a perfect opportunity.

The Second Prince came to House of Ye to show his kindness. That was with obvious purpose.

When he saw Bing-Er's extremely beautiful face, he was lost in it. When Ye Xiao asked him this question, he finally woke up. He shouted with a dark face, "Get off, you! How dare you talk to Lord Ye like that?"

He fiercely scolded the man!

He faced Ye Xiao and said with a smile, "Brother Ye, please don't get mad. These flunkies have followed me a long time. They barely check on themselves and always think they are strong enough. Heh, heh."

Ye Xiao smiled. It looked scary though. He slowly spoke, "Never mind. Flunkies are all like this. Dogs play tough when their master stands behind them. I can understand that."

Behind the prince, the man, Wang Zhong, who talked first suddenly became a fool. His face turned blue at once.

He felt insulted.

[Flunky? Dog?]

He had served the prince so well, and he had been loyal to him all along. He had done so many dirty works for the prince; in fact, he had made tons of crime for him. What he got after all was just that?

The Second Prince said it himself.

In fact, when Second Prince said it out, he immediately felt regret. He was just about to say something to comfort Wang Zhong, but Ye Xiao immediately emphasized it.

What Ye Xiao said immediately gave a certain meaning to the word "flunky". Second Prince did think that those men were like his dogs, but he also knew that he shouldn't say it out.

Sometimes, it was better to keep the facts in heart and not to reveal it to public!

...

Chapter 515: Say It; Do It!

"In fact..." Second Prince spoke again.

Although Ye Xiao had put a conclusion to the word, the prince still thought that he could turn it around and make his men feel better.

"I understand. I really do." Ye Xiao sincerely said, "In fact, between you and me, there has never been any discomfort. It is always these flunkies, who are ignorant fools and cannot understand their master's mind. They always shout like mad dogs. They are the ones who break the harmonious relationship. They ruin everything."

Ye Xiao fiercely looked aside. "The master feels most helpless when he has such stupid flunkies! For me, I always hope that they can learn fast. Even if they are like dogs, they should be good dogs. Mad dogs are going to get killed sooner or later! They keep ruining our plans, but we still have to feed them everyday. We do have enough food for them, but..."

Second Prince's face was like pig liver at the moment.

Every word Ye Xiao said was messing with that Wang Zhong directly. However, he did make a mistake first, so he couldn't say any words to defend himself. He could only endure.

"Flunky is flunky!" Ye Xiao stared at Wang Zhong coldly and fiercely spoke, "Pah! Such lowly dog. Why show him mercy! Just

beat him to death already! Disgusting! How useless!"

He couldn't stop insulting him. As he talked more, he talked more vicious.

Second Prince's face was dark and gloomy.

Wang Zhong's eyes were like full of fire. He looked at Ye Xiao, gritted his teeth, then said, "Lord Ye, do not go too far on this! Even a dog has pride! Don't you have dogs in your house?"

Don't you have dogs in your house?

As he said so, he looked to the guards around the yard as a vicious smile showed up on his mouth.

It seemed to be a weak defense, but it was dragging Ye Xiao into a trap.

If Ye Xiao said yes, that meant the guards in his house were lowly dogs too. That would break their hearts. If Ye Xiao denied it, then he was slapping his own mouth.

He wanted Ye Xiao to make mistakes in either way!

When he said so, the guards all turned gloomy.

"Good question! In my house, there is no lowly dog!" Ye Xiao laughed. "This is our steward. He used to be a soldier under my father's lead. He is also my father's sworn brother. He is my uncle! Those brothers out there are all my father's men. They are brothers who have fought side by side in the battle! They live and they die all for my father. My father will go to the sea of fire and mountain of blades for them!"

"The entire kingdom, the entire military force, they all know about it!"

"Besides, they are warriors who protect the kingdom! For Kingdom of Chen, they went through countless battles and got lots of injuries. There are wounds in everyone's body. Those are marks that showed the stories of how they fight for their country!"

Ye Xiao looked to the people behind Second Prince with cold eyes. He coldly spoke, "Who dares to call these brave men lowly dogs? Do not feel offended. May I ask, do you have those marks on you too?"

He glanced at those men.

The three of them all lowered their heads.

Who dared to call them lowly dogs?

Even the king wouldn't dare!

The wounds on them were the medals they got from countless battles!

General Ye could swear brotherhood to his steward. He could fight side by side facing death with his soldiers. Could the prince do that? Would the prince's father swear brotherhood to those men? Would they fight side by side in the battle facing death?

Ye Xiao just stopped talking. His voice resounded in the air, and all the guards in the House of Ye stood straight up with fever in their eyes.

[Since the young lord said so about us, we would like to die for him!]

[We knew the General never treats us as useless men. He has always treated us like his real brothers. Now I know, the young lord never sees us as servants too!]

[We are soldiers in the battle!]

[We are meritorious men in the House of Ye!]

[We are never flunkies! We are never lowly dogs!]

"We are not lowly dogs either!" Wang Zhong's scheme failed. He felt so upset to the point his face turned red and he just wanted to say something to defend himself.

Ye Xiao looked at him disdainfully. He didn't talk anymore, but just taunted him on the face.

"Brother Ye, you are really like a tiger's son. How heroic!" Second Prince praised him, trying to act sincere. He glanced at the guards of the House of Ye and thought, [These are exactly lowly dogs, Ye Xiao just forcibly raised their positions... Soldiers... Soldiers are lowly dogs too! In our eyes, even you, the House of Ye... are just lowly dogs!]

However, he would never say it out. He didn't dare to.

Even his father, the king, wouldn't dare to say so!

"Second Prince, just get straight to the point." Ye Xiao was impatient. Second Prince spoke like a noble man but kept sneakily looking at Bing-Er. Ye Xiao said, "Bing-Er, go to my room and tidy up my bed. I am going to bed soon. Serve me to sleep."

"Yes." Bing-Er blushed as she left with a lowered head.

'Tidy up my bed. I am going to bed soon. Serve me to sleep.' That explained too much. It was such brazen saying.

It totally confirmed that this beauty belonged to the young lord of the House of Ye.

He was simply declaring his ownership!

Other men could quit thinking about it.

Second Prince's face turned even gloomy. He watched Bing-Er trotting in as the fever in his eyes disappeared.

"Is this lady your concubine, Brother Ye?" He asked with a smile.

Apparently, he didn't want to give up yet.

Ye Xiao disdainfully humphed. [You piece of sh*t, how dare you have any thoughts on my Bing-Er? What a good dream to you!]

He humphed and said, "Hmm. She is my sixth wife. She is new here. She barely knows the rules here yet. That is impolite that she remained embarrassed when you arrived."

Second Prince's face was full of disappointment this time. He couldn't cover it anymore.

What Ye Xiao said totally killed his last hope.

Wang Zhong was smiling viciously. He said, "Lord Ye, you may be wrong. I see this pretty lady. Her eyebrows are tight and skin is exquisite. Her eyes are clear and naive. She must be a virgin. You said it too soon, Lord Ye."

Second Prince's eyes lit up again when he heard Wang Zhong.

"Pah! That is none of your fxcking business, you dog!" Ye Xiao completely lost his patience. He reached out one hand and slapped Wang Zhong on the face, hard. "You fxcking disgusting dog! How dare you make comments on my woman! Where is your manners! Somebody come and beat this fxcking dog out of here! House of Ye doesn't welcome lousy animals!"

...

Chapter 516: Super Cheeky!

Ye Xiao gave him a slap on the face hard, without any noticing! Nobody knew he would do so, especially Wang Zhong. He was hit right firmly on the face. He was hit up in the air and a few teeth were hit off his mouth.

Ye Xiao did it with anger. He didn't do it in full power, but it was still heavy.

Wang Zhong only felt like there was a huge bell ringing in his head. He was dizzy and blood came out from his mouth. He nearly passed out.

Guards of House of Ye had been enduring this disgusting prick for a long time. Now they got the order from Ye Xiao. They just rushed over to Wang Zhong, over a dozen of the guards. Second Prince didn't even have time to say anything, Wang Zhong had already been hit dozens of punches. He was hit away flying in the air like a sandbag.

He passed out!

"Ye Xiao... You!" Second Prince was furious.

"I am teaching your unruly dog for you! When a dog behaves wrong, you better hit it. You hit it a lot, then it become obedient!"

Ye Xiao rubbed the hand which he used to slap Wang Zhong. He

said coldly, "Otherwise, if this fxcking stupid dog makes any serious problem later, things will get real nasty for you, I am afraid!"

When he said it, his eyes flashed crazily with intent of killing.

It was no doubt a word of warning!

He didn't even want to cover it!

Second Prince showed a dark face. He looked gloomy in eyes. He looked at the guards coldly, who were punching his man crazily. He finally burst in anger, "Ye Xiao, stop them!"

Ye Xiao heard it, but he acted like he didn't. He gave the order, "Beat him hard! Throw him out! Do it quick! I really don't like it when that dog barking around me!"

Second Prince looked even angrier. He knew what Ye Xiao said was funny. He wanted to say something, but he couldn't. If he did, he would be barking too. It wasn't a clever move to say more at the moment.

Eventually, Wang Zhong was beaten up so hard. He was seriously injured and didn't even have energy to 'bark' anymore. He was dragged by the guards and thrown out the gate.

He didn't move a bit. He might just pass out, or actually die already.

Second Prince could only watch it. His eyes were full of anger. Fire of anger filled his chest. After a while, he gasped pointing at ye Xiao and said, "Ye Xiao, nice job! You got balls!"

Ye Xiao stared at this prince and spoke blandly, "Your honor, I surely know about myself. I just don't like it when people points at me. Even when he is praising me!"

Second Prince was furious. He totally forgot about why he came today. He spoke with anger, "I just pointed. So what?"

Behind him, two of his men hurriedly got over and said, "Your honor... You honor... Focus on what is important first... Please..."

They were angry about Ye Xiao too, but they also sighed for the prince.

[Things just happened. What matters now?]

[It is done. There it is the hostility! There is no turnaround!]

[It has been difficult for us to have this opportunity. How come we just missed it?]

[What... What is going on?]

[Why are they both so easy to get angry today?]

[Lord Ye acted like we owed him the entire world from the beginning...]

[Second Prince was like going crazy. We are here for some real important task. He hasn't said anything about it yet, but we are already being against each other now. Are we going to begin a fight now?...]

Second Prince was enlightened. He gasped, looking at Ye Xiao, who was also furious. Second Prince laughed all of a sudden.

"Hahahahaha..." He laughed. It shocked everybody.

[What? How can you still laugh now?]

"See? I was right! I am good at evaluating people, right?" Second Prince looked at his men and said loudly, "Lord Ye is such a heroic man. He loves and hates, has bursting temper; He does what he wants without hesitation. He won't change his mind for anybody or anything. What a heroic man! You didn't believe me. What now? You believe it now?"

The men behind him were stunned, but they still nodded. "Smart and wise, your honor. You truly have sharp eyes. We are never going to catch up with you."

They were flattering, but complaining in their minds, [When on earth did you say those words?]

[You weren't wrong? Of course you weren't... You didn't say anything, how wrong could it be...]

[I think... Lord Ye may be a heroic man... But our beloved prince must be cheeky and full of lies.]

Ye Xiao was going to burst with anger earlier.

He didn't care whether it was the prince he was dealing with or not. He was strong enough to ignore these people. When he wanted to play tough, he would do it. He wouldn't scruple. He never did.

He was no more that young foolish man when he had just reborn to this world.

However, when he was just about to burst, Second Prince actually completely changed sides! Ye Xiao felt so impressive when he heard the prince said.

[Universe is full of possibilities indeed. I thought I am very cheeky, but never thought that one can be so unbelievably cheeky like him...]

[Terrifying!]

[I have nearly slaughtered his man with punches... He actually

turned it over and acted like he was testing me. Unbelievable...]

Ye Xiao answered, "Oh. So you are trying to figure out whether you have sharp eyes or not?"

Second Prince had calmed down. He acted like he was so close to Ye Xiao, spoke with sincerity, "Xiaoxiao, come on, I am your guest today. Don't you think you should at least offer tea for me?"

Such a powerful man. Just within seconds, he started to call Ye Xiao 'Xiaoxiao'. A moment earlier he just wanted to tear Ye Xiao apart. He sounded like he was such a close friend to Ye Xiao when he said the last words.

However, Ye Xiao wouldn't care if he was being honest or not. He said, "Your honor, what do you want today. Just be frank. Didn't you hear what I said to my woman. I told her to serve me bed. I am quite in a hurry. So please let's make it done quick."

Facing this prince, who was emotional, randy, shameless and cheeky, Ye Xiao truly had no patience to talk to him more. Especially at the moment, he was quite bothered.

"What a straight talk from an honest man! I will be frank then. This time, I am here to ask for your help, Brother Ye. Please, do me a favor." Second Prince spoke with sincerity.

...

Chapter 517: I Want To Kill Him!

Ye Xiao was stunned.

[Holly motherfxcker. I told you to be frank. And you are so frank? How overbearing!]

[Besides, what happened there, I am not a fool. You were not testing any shit!]

[That was real conflict!]

[A tough one!]

[After that, you actually asked me to help you so frankly? So cheeky!]

[What a weirdo!]

Song Jue stood beside him. He seemed quite unhappy too.

Steward Song understood one thing, [No wonder Chen can rule the entire kingdom. Look how cheeky they can be. That is incomparable. In my life, even the lives after this life, I will never be able to be so shameless!]

"What kind of favor exactly? We are being frank like this now. Why not just make it more clear!" Ye Xiao felt that his face turned

numb because of surprises.

"Last night, something happened in Chen-Xing City... I think you should have heard about it." Second Prince acted like he was so honest and sincere at the moment, "Let alone the huge disturbance in the capital, our palaces were broken into big issues. We lost many men, and..."

Ye Xiao understood before he finished.

[I see!]

[He asked me for help even though I have insulted him like that. That is the reason.]

The night when the cultivators from the two great sects rushed in the palaces of the three princes, people of the three noble clans were slaughtered out in their places...

That meant all three princes' supports from the noble clans were cut off.

Within the next few years, the three princes had no outside supports anymore. The three of them all lost their supports. That meant they were back to the same line now.

In the competition among them, they would mostly depend on the forces inside Kingdom of Chen. Ye Nantian was the strongest one. No matter who got the support from Ye Nantian, he got the

biggest chance to take the throne.

Even though Second Prince had been insulted like that here, he accepted it. He wanted the support from Ye so much.

Comparing to the throne, pride meant nothing to him.

As long as he could get on the throne, he would get his pride back in any way!

Of course he wouldn't ruin the opportunity just to vent the temporary anger!

"Don't you know, your honor. We Ye Clan never participate in such issue." Ye Xiao didn't even want to hear details from the prince. He just declined directly.

Second Prince stared at him. He was shocked and he couldn't say anything.

He never had thought that Lord Ye would say no to him so quickly and decisively. He hadn't even told him the offers.

He tried to persuade Ye Xiao. However, Ye Xiao talked softer, but wouldn't agree to it.

[We don't participate in the fight for the throne. We don't want the honor of supporting the crown!]

In fact, Second Prince felt released.

[Ye wouldn't help me, but they wouldn't help my brothers either. That means a lot to me.]

Second Prince felt good about it.

He was happy and then thought of other enjoyable things.

He lowered his voice, "Lord Ye, I won't push you, since you want to be nonaligned. However, may I ask for another thing?"

Ye Xiao looked at him with confusion. He didn't even want to talk anymore. He just gave him a hint with eyes.

[What is it. Speak. And get off now...]

"Ahem... That lady... Is she really your woman?" Second Prince was being so obvious now.

[Even if she really is your concubine, it is normal for people in noble houses to exchange women. That is normal.]

[As long as I pay enough to you, I will get that girl as I wish! You don't get involved to the fight among princes. Fine. You won't offend me for just a woman, will you?]

Ye Xiao's face cooled down. He spoke with a terrifying voice, "She is mine!"

He sounded obviously disagreeable.

He didn't try to cover the coldness in his voice.

Second Prince gritted with the teeth and spoke in a deep voice, "Congratulations then."

He stopped this topic. After a few meaningless words, he took leave.

Before he left, he couldn't help looking back to the yard for a few times. Apparently he didn't completely give up on her. However, he was disappointed, because her pretty face never showed up for him again.

He left with dissatisfaction.

He came with joy but left with disappointment!

Ye Xiao stared at the back of Second Prince. He was fierce. The intent of killing was rolling in his heart, never stopped!

Song Jue stood beside him. He couldn't totally understand Ye Xiao.

"Kid, do you want to kill him?" Song Jue asked.

"It isn't a tough job! Is it?" Ye Xiao spoke coldly.

Song Jue nodded to agree.

Song Jue was recovered almost ninety percent. If he was to deal with Second Prince, he could wipe out his entire palace within one night by himself. He would do it quiet and clean!

Steward Song feared nothing at all.

However, Ye Xiao was even more fearless than him.

If he wanted to get Second Prince killed, Song Jue wouldn't be his primary choice!

"I think even if we stay still, this prince will come to us tonight." Song Jue spoke in a deep voice, "The girl is too beautiful. She is one of the most beautiful ladies even in the Qing-Yun Realm. That prince's thought is clear. He couldn't hide it from us. He thinks because he is a prince, so he can do whatever he wants. He thinks we will respect him no matter how wrong he will be. He thinks we wouldn't dare to turn hostile to him. That gives him crankiness..."

Ye Xiao said blandly, "That is why I will kill him tonight!"

"I won't stop it." Song Jue spoke blandly, "But the girl is too pure."

"Too pure?" Ye Xiao frowned. He was confused by Song Jue's comment.

"Silly kid. You tried so hard to cultivate Bing-Er. You want her to company you in the martial world, don't you? You want to be with her side by side in the long life of yours, right?" Song Jue asked blandly.

"That's right." Ye Xiao didn't deny it. "She is so talented. It will be a huge loss for the universe if she cannot get into the Qing-Yun Realm and become one of the strongest figures!"

"That's true. That's why Bing-Er needs to change. A thorough change." Song Jue spoke blandly, "She needs to see more and experience more of the hideousness of the reality. A flower in greenhouse would never be able to see the splendor of the rainbow if it doesn't come through the rainstorm... I think you know what I mean."

...

Chapter 518: Beauty Brings Misfortune!

"Not to mention making her live in the martial world, even to live as a normal person in the normal world could be a problem for her. For an ordinary person, a pretty face like hers is definitely misfortune."

Ye Xiao was silent.

Song Jue was right. He knew it.

The girl was too pure and naive. She was smart enough, but was too kind. She was bound to suffer losses in the world. One tiny mistake would bring her to unrepairable trauma.

"Even though you can keep her safe now, you cannot be close to her every second in your life." Song Jue said.

Ye Xiao was silent and then he said, "What do you think we should do?"

"If anything is going to happen tonight, let the girl participate in it. She needs to meet something bad, evil and bloody now." Song Jue said, "Especially... to face the evil that is particularly against women..."

"Do not be weak. She has to know about such thing. Otherwise she may be swallowed completely in the future." Song Jue said, "In this world, we are still able to protect her. If we are in the Qing-

Yun Realm... If we happened to be trapped by some other issues, tragedy may just get on her!"

Ye Xiao's face was dark. He spoke blandly, "Uncle Song, you are right. I shall let that ignorant prince be a knife grinder for her tonight! But I have to make sure Bing-Er will be safe. I won't let her get hurt!"

"Not even a bit!"

"The evil in this world, we need to let her see it. It doesn't mean she has to pay for it!" Ye Xiao spoke with a gloomy face.

Song Jue was annoyed. "What are you talking about, kid? Am I such an unreliable man to you? How would I let her get hurt? Just relax. Nothing could go wrong tonight!"

Ye Xiao looked up. The sun was in the west already. He half closed the eyes and said, "Uncle Song, I have a strange feeling."

Song Jue said, "Feeling? What feeling? What do you feel?"

Ye Xiao closed the eyes and opened his pale hand. He spoke in a low voice, "I can feel that when I leave this world someday, I will make lots of slaughters in this world. Blood will flow into rivers in the world!"

Song Jue was a bold man, but he was shocked and a bit terrified.

...

When Second Prince left House of Ye, he was extremely gloomy.

"Stupid prick! You fail to appreciate my kindness!" He cursed.

He said, "Take Wang Zhong. Let's go home."

He was utterly disgraced this time.

Under all those people's watch, his most trusted man Wang Zhong was beaten up half to death and thrown out from the house like a garbage. He lied on the ground like a broken bag, with blood flowing on the floor.

What truly annoyed Second Prince was not that Wang Zhong got punched, or his recruitment failed, it was... He was most annoyed that there was such a beautiful lady on Ye Xiao's side who was like a faery. [How do a prick like you deserve such beauty in the world!]

[And you dared to decline me before I finished my talk!]

[You truly don't know how to appreciate kind heart!]

[Such pretty girl. Only people like us, royal born, can have such beauty! You are merely a foppish stupid young lad. How can you deserve such a lady?]

"This Ye Xiao... He really is ignorant piece of shit!" Second Prince spoke to his men. "Does he think he can be like Monarch Feng of Ling-Bao Hall? How dare him looking down upon royal blood! Bold fxcking dog! Humph!"

His men all knew what he was thinking at the moment!

He wanted to... snatch that beauty!

They might not understand him if they hadn't seen Bing-Er's face. It wasn't a good idea to mess with the son of a Great General, the pillar of the kingdom, at this important time!

However, they all saw Bing-Er. They fully understood Second Prince.

Such a beautiful girl... Maybe every dozens of thousand years could there be one beauty like her! For such a beauty, it was reasonable to do anything!

[To rage up with anger for a woman like her is so... worth it! If it was me, I would do it too! I will go snatch her too!]

[So willing to do that...]

[A man who wouldn't do it for her... is not a real man!]

[At least normal men all want to get her!]

"You all know what I want tonight. Don't you?" Second Prince was a bit excited. "All the forces in the palace are under your command. Besides, I will send the two grand masters to help you. We have to make it. Do not leak anything out."

"Keep it a secret!"

Second Prince emphasize it.

"Your honor, if we are found..." One of the guards asked.

Second Prince looked fierce and vicious. "So what? This kingdom belongs to the royal house. Don't you know what you can do?"

"Yes. I do. Royal power is the primary power. Nobody can challenge it."

Ye Xiao had been studying the strange power from Brother Egg for a whole afternoon.

He found that the power inside him wouldn't react to anything.

He could feel it slowly changing his body. It was making his body, including the Jing and Mai, bones, muscles, even soul and mind, stronger and stronger.

However, it was too passive for him. Ye Xiao always liked to get the initiative. He didn't like this passive way to improve. However, even though he had operated East-rising Purple Qi to try to digest the power, he failed. Even East-ring Purple Qi, such powerful martial art didn't work on that power.

Ye Xiao sat there cultivated for a long time. He could feel his capability was improving fast. He was improving twice faster than he used to be. It was boosting. That was a good thing to know. Gradually, he was reaching the top of level five of Sky Origin Stage.

He just needed a break, a spurt, to get through level five of Sky Origin Stage.

However, Ye Xiao didn't feel much joy in making progress in cultivation.

He couldn't figure out what that special power from Brother Egg could bring to him other than boosting his cultivation. He had stood in front of Brother Egg when it was absorbing the enormous spiritual qi trying to stop it.

It was just a few seconds, but it was a huge amount of spiritual qi that got through Ye Xiao's body. It was almost the limitation that Ye Xiao could hold in his body.

He had been working on it for an entire afternoon. He just poured the spiritual qi gradually into his dantian. It still needed more time to digest it all.

He was so close to figure out all about the special power. He surely needed to digest the spiritual qi in his body soon enough, but it wasn't that urgent!

The most important thing was to figure out what exactly this mass of power was!

...

Chapter 519: Bad Man! Humph!

"This power, I can feel it. It's definitely giving me great benefits, but I don't know what it can help me on. What is it useful for? It can't be just modifying my body, can it?"

Ye Xiao couldn't understand it.

Normally, as he had been cultivating East-rising Purple Qi, his body should have been perfectly modified. He shouldn't need to do any modification to his body anymore.

However, Brother Egg would never do a useless thing. He just couldn't figure out why.

One more thing was that Ye Xiao felt that there was some ancient aura inside that power.

It felt like something from the source of the universe, from deep behind sky and earth!

He decided to put it at the back of his mind as he couldn't figure anything out. He ended cultivating and took some rests. After dinner, he sat in his room thinking about the possibilities in the future. He didn't even care about what Second Prince would do in the night.

It would be overestimating that stupid prince if he cared about it too much.

He was powerful in capability, cultivation, and power range in this world. If he couldn't keep Bing-Er safe, it would be a big joke!

The only thing he needed to consider was how to get Bing-Er involved and how to guide her to accept the reality!

Ye Xiao sincerely wanted Bing-Er to stay pure!

But Song Jue was right. It was impossible.

Bing-Er's future would never be always under his protection. She would have to face the dirty world someday!

It was like... the two maids beside Bai Chen, Wan of the Clouds and Xiu of the Heavens. Bing-Er should fight for her own fame in this mortal world too!

The filthy, bloody, evil, and disgusting facts were something she had to learn about sooner or later. Otherwise, when she got into the martial world, without his protection, she would definitely get hurt!

When she got hurt in that situation, it might be some life trauma!

Ye Xiao knew that Bing-Er should become much more powerful than Wan and Xiu.

"I will dance in the chaos and shock the universe in the future. Bing-Er is talented. She is boosting in cultivation. She can surely catch up with me! I don't want her to be a maid like Wan-Er and Xiu-Er. I want her to be a unique and outstanding figure in the world!"

"What I need is not to be scary in the Land of Han-Yang, or outshine everyone in the Qing-Yun Realm!"

"Even when it is in Human Realm Upon Heavens... I can stay behind everything. As long as Bing-Er shows up, she can shock the universe too! She can despise the firmament! She can command the world!"

"That is the Bing-Er I want! She definitely has the potential!"

"She needs practice! She has to!"

"It is fine if that stupid prince won't come, but if he comes..." Ye Xiao's face turned fierce. "I don't care whose son he is! If he dares to do anything here tonight, I will let him and his entire house die in darkness!"

In the night.

Lights were put on in the city.

Ye Xiao sat quietly in the house, waiting for something to happen.

In fact, he was sure Second Prince would do something in the night according to what he had done earlier. A prince would never do that reckless thing like that at the important time.

Bing-Er's beauty was like the most powerful weapon in the world already!

Song Jue had said something helpless in the afternoon.

"In the Land of Han-Yang or in Qing-Yun Realm, I am an experienced man. However, I have never seen any girl who is more beautiful than Bing-Er."

"She is particularly beautiful. She is the most unique beauty in history!"

"No matter in which realm she stays, her pretty face would cause disasters!"

"In the world where strength is most valued, beauty is a sin!"

"Her beauty will let people around her lose life, hope and future."

"Xiao Xiao, if you want Bing-Er to stay with you all the time, you cannot just keep protecting her. You are way too weak for that. Bing-Er is also too weak yet!"

"In fact, you should thank the good luck. This is just a low realm. There is law restraining people's behaviors, so that is much better. Even when some prince wants to get Bing-Er, we can handle it. It won't lead to any tragedy yet... However, when you go to the Qing-Yun Realm, you will know that Second Prince is not so unreasonable at all... People in Qing-Yun Realm can be ten thousand times more vicious than this prince. Besides, they are always more than ten thousand times stronger than him too!"

"With your current strength, if you go to the Qing-Yun Realm now with Bing-Er, she will become other's toy within three days! You don't even have a chance to defend from those strong figures!"

"So work harder, kid!"

He finished talking and then sighed and left.

Ye Xiao didn't say anything. He just looked at Song Jue's back because he knew Song Jue was telling the truth.

[Uncle Song, you have no idea. I am exactly from Qing-Yun Realm. I surely know you are telling the truth.]

[However, no matter how dangerous it is up there, I will go back someday! No matter who dares to do anything to hurt us, I will kill his entire family!]

[There is no law in Qing-Yun Realm? I will be the law in Qing-Yun Realm!]

Ye Xiao thought. He made himself a goal.

[Maybe it is wrong be be so protective, but who wouldn't want to protect a girl like Bing-Er? I can let her learn something, but I will never let anybody hurt her!]

[In the chaos in the future, there must be a beauty beside me when I look down upon the world!]

[Because I am Ye Xiao!]

[Xiao Monarch, Ye Xiao!]

Ye Xiao sat there, his eyes half closed. He looked so indifferent, thinking about all that would happen.

After a long time, he finally sorted out everything. He looked much better now.

He didn't feel anxiety anymore!

At this moment, Bing-Er was hanging around him. She looked at Ye Xiao's face from time to time with her pretty big eyes.

When Ye Xiao looked cold and indifferent, Bing-Er didn't dare to make a sound. She just stayed around waiting for him...

Her heart was full of worry.

When she saw Ye Xiao's face turn better, she felt relieved. She took a breath out and started to walk around in front of Ye Xiao.

She wanted to say something, but she didn't dare to. So she just held it there.

Ye Xiao had noticed it already, but he pretended that he didn't know. He wanted to see what the girl was up to, and how long the girl could hold it for.

Finally, when Ye Xiao made a stretch and about to stand up, Bing-Er rushed over to him.

She stared at him with a pair of big eyes, blinking.

She couldn't hold it anymore.

Ye Xiao smiled and said, "Girl, what's wrong?"

Bing-Er giggled and spoke in a low voice, "Master, is it good that I changed the sword art? Not bad, isn't it?"

Ye Xiao nodded, "Sure. It should be okay."

"It is just okay?..." Bing-Er lowered her head, speaking with disappointment.

Apparently, she realized that the sword art, after she changed it, had actually become much more powerful. She felt so proud and satisfied when she got to know it.

She had never felt so good about herself before.

She hanged around Ye Xiao because she wanted to hear compliment from Ye Xiao...

She encouraged herself and asked for Ye Xiao's opinion, but only to get such a disappointing comment. She felt so embarrassed...

"Is it just okay?" Bing-Er asked with hope.

"Hmm. Not bad." Ye Xiao tried not to laugh out and acted like he was trying to comfort her. "Just okay."

Bing-Er's face turned gloomy right away. She was so looking forward to the compliment, but ended up to be thrown a damp over. She almost cried. Tears were in her eyes, almost falling out. She twitched her lips and prepared to walk out the room.

Ye Xiao looked at her sad face. He couldn't hold it anymore. He burst into laughter and grabbed Bing-Er to his arms. He kissed on her cheek and said, "I was wrong. It is not just okay. It is marvelous... Hahaha..."

Bing-Er widely opened her eyes as she looked at him. "You... Didn't you say it was just okay?"

Ye Xiao laughed and touched her pretty face. He said, "I lied to you. Alright? Hahaha..."

Bing-Er finally realized it. She angrily said, "You bad man!"

She tried to struggle and get rid of his arms.

Ye Xiao held her so tight and kept laughing.

Bing-Er struggled at the beginning and then stopped. She stayed in Ye Xiao's arms like a little cat, feeling so warm and happy in her heart. She just wanted to stay in this warm hug forever. Wouldn't it be great?

...

Chapter 520: Spellbound

The Little girl raised up her head and stared at Ye Xiao. And then she lowered her head again. Her heart was beating fast. She felt Ye Xiao's big hand moving around her waist. Her skin where his hand was touching was getting hot.

She blushed.

She just lied in Ye Xiao's arms quietly, feeling her heart beat getting faster and faster. Her body was feeling hotter and hotter, and her face was burning hot.

Ye Xiao felt it too. When he looked at Bing-Er, he found her lying in his arms with a blushed and pretty face. Her long eyelids were blinking. Apparently, she was not calm at all. She just tried to be quiet while being held in his arms.

The pretty face of her was so unbelievably cute.

Ye Xiao was drowned in it.

He was moved. He held her up and made their position face to face. Bing-Er's body shook. She felt like something was going to happen, so she kept her eyes closed tight. Her eyelids were shaking.

Ye Xiao was a virgin too, but he just couldn't hold the impulse from deep down his heart. He moved his head to Bing-Er

instinctually. His two lips gently touched Bing-Er's lips.

Bing-Er was blank and her body became rigid.

She kept her eyes closed, unable to move her body in the slightest. They just hanged beside her, like the arms of a puppet. She held her breath, trying to feel the soft lips kissing on her lips, asking for more.

Gradually, the flame of thirst was fired up in her heart.

She could feel there was a soft and moistened thing sticking in between her lips. She couldn't hold her breath anymore, causing her to gasp. The thing suddenly got into her mouth, touching, taking, giving...

Their tongues kept touching. Bing-Er was shaking like she was shocked by electricity. Finally, her hands raised up and held around Ye Xiao's neck.

She hesitated for just a moment and then held him so tight.

She felt his tongue in her mouth searching her small wonderful tongue. She was trying to get her tongue away, but when it was touched, she would start shaking...

The two warm hands of his kept moving on her body. They slowly... got inside her clothes. They were touching her skin directly. She breathed heavier, like she was almost choking.

Wherever the two hands touched, she felt like it was burning.

She felt like her body was plasticine, being played in his hands under his will...

After a while, their lips separated. She still kept her eyes closed; she didn't dare to open it at all. She still felt his lips kissing her face, nose, eyebrows, ears... He was kissing her so carefully...

Bing-Er felt like she was melting...

When his hands moved up from her waist, it moved with hesitation. At the end, it finally held on her soft and warm breast. Bing-Er finally couldn't help moaning. - Ahh... - Her body turned soft and fell on him. She was weak now.

She murmured, "Master... Master..."

And then she moved her lips to kiss him. It stopped him from kissing wildly on her face. She stuck out her small tongue into his mouth. This time, it was her tongue chasing his...

Ye Xiao was first shocked, but then he made an even drastic reaction on it...

Finally...

After a while...

Ye Xiao couldn't wait anymore. As he kept kissing the beauty in his arms, he held up the most beautiful body in the world. He stood up, held her, and walked into his room.

At the moment, although he was a virgin, driven by the animal instinct, he did whatever any man would do.

Bing-Er gasped heavily.

She kept her burning face touching his chest. She just kept gasping, saying nothing. [No matter what Master want to do on me... I will say yes...]

That was a silent permission. She was supporting him.

Ye Xiao got into the room in three strides. He put Bing-Er on the bed. Bing-Er kept her eyes closed tight as she felt a strong body fell on top of her body...

She couldn't help letting out a moan. She pushed the Ice Soul Sword off the bed a bit... [Hmm. This is too hard and cold...]

The sword was definitely important for Bing-Er. She would never put it away. However, she had to put it away today, because she got something she loved more!

It was just a small move, and yet she felt so burning hot on her entire body now...

She hoped he didn't see it, because she thought it was embarrassing...

However, things always went against one's wish. Bing-Er was surprised, because the heavy and warm body lying on her stopped moving.

After a long while, it wasn't moving.

Bing-Er was surprised. She was so shy, but she opened her eyes to see Ye Xiao. His face had returned to normal.

He was staring at something.

That was exactly the Ice Soul Sword.

Ye Xiao stared at it and gritted with his teeth.

He didn't know whether he should thank this sword or hate it!

He was nearly burned in fire of impetuosity, but was cooled down by the sword.

The impulse in his heart was gone.

His eyes returned to clear and sane.

He sighed and got up from Bing-Er's body. He spoke softly, "Bing-Er, I am so sorry. I was made a mistake. Take a good rest. Have a sweet dream."

Bing-Er was shocked. She looked at Ye Xiao. She wasn't bashful anymore. She asked, "Master, did I do anything wrong? Why do you..."

Ye Xiao sighed, "No. You didn't. It was me. I nearly made a mistake. A huge mistake."

When he glanced at the sword, there was a slim figure that appeared in his head.

Jun Yinglian.

That beautiful woman just showed up inside his eyes so surprisingly.

Her clothes was white like snow. She was standing on top of a snow mountain, her eyes controlling all of his emotions. She stared at him, clean and leer like ice.

Ye Xiao could feel the sorrow in her eyes.

It seemed her voice was resounding in his ear, questioning him.

"Ye Xiao! 'I regret that I let you be solitary; if there is a next life, I promise I will accompany you to travel the world.' Ye Xiao, do you remember what you said?"

"'To escape from the tear of the beauty; to prevent hurting her heart. When death comes one day, to turn into an unrestrained cloud!' Ye Xiao, you escaped from the tear of the beauty. Do you know how much tears I have shed for you? You don't want to hurt my heart, but you have already have hurt me so bad!"

"Ye Xiao, I hate you!"

"I hate you!"

Ye Xiao felt like a bucket of ice cold water was poured down on his head!

At this moment, there was no impulse at all! There was no impetuosity anymore!

...

Chapter 521: To Not Let Down!

Bing-Er was apparently scared. She looked at Ye Xiao, like a panicking deer. In her pretty eyes, there were tears of helplessness and desperation.

Her pale little hands grabbed her disordered clothes while staring at Ye Xiao with tears in her eyes. Her lips were twitching. She was trying not to cry out.

The girl was exactly like an abandoned child, whose heart was filled with sorrow and helplessness.

Ye Xiao sat on the bed with a face of regret. He reached out his hands and held Bing-Er's shaking body in arms. He spoke softly, "Bing-Er, I am sorry. I just thought of some unhappy past. It was not on you."

Bing-Er was still shaking even though Ye Xiao had explained. As she kept feeling the warmth from his body, she calmed down. Gradually, she stopped shaking, but at the end, she was weeping in his arms.

Ye Xiao clapped on her back and sighed with helplessness. He said, "Bing-Er, I really like you. I really want to have you now. It was all I want to do just now. I wasn't pretending."

Bing-Er stopped crying. She just stayed in his arms listening carefully.

"Even at this moment, I am still sure that you are my woman. There will be one day, you will be known as mine." Ye Xiao spoke decisively, "However, not now. Deep inside my heart, there is something that I feel extremely regretful... There is someone that I will feel guilty for all my life... It sticks right in my heart. I can never let it go."

Bing-Er spoke in a low voice in his arms, "Is she... your wife?"

Ye Xiao shook his head, and then smiled bitterly.

It turned out Bing-Er knew the other girl, Su Yeyue. However, it wasn't Su Yeyue. It was Jun Yinglian, who was so proud like she was beyond clouds, so clean like the moon.

"... Once there was a lady. She is like..." Ye Xiao told her the story patiently. He had never told anyone else before. He used to have a most trusted and closest friend, but he didn't tell him either. He told that friend everything except Jun Yinglian. However, he needed to confide it.

He slightly changed some facts about it and told Bing-Er all about the story.

Ninety percent of it remained the truth. He just changed some times and locations.

"... At the end, I have to let her down... And then I realized I was

wrong. I was so wrong... But it was... too late now." Ye Xiao sighed.

Bing-Er was apparently immersed in this sad story. She twitched her lips and said, "Master, you are not just so wrong. You are unbelievably wrong! This sister treated you with so much true love, yet you actually let her down like that. You are really... Humph!"

She actually empathized Jun Yinglian?!

"I know. I need time, okay? I, I cannot fail her!" Ye Xiao held Bing-Er in arms and kissed on her eyes softly.

"Hmm!" Bing-Er nodded. She raised up her hands to hold Ye Xiao's neck. At the moment, she didn't feel sad anymore. She was touched by the story. She murmured, "I will wait. No matter how long it takes, I will wait for you!"

"As long as you are alive, I will follow you for the rest of my life," Bing-Er spoke in a low voice, "Master, please, put me in your heart somewhere... Anywhere..."

Ye Xiao was touched, and he held her so tight. He could feel the impulse rising up in the heart again.

He tried to suppressed the emotion and spoke gently, "Girl, don't worry. It won't take long. I promise..."

And then he held her head up and smiled to her. "What a pretty

girl. I won't give up on you. I will definitely have you by myself! It is such a pain to lose a girl once. How would I do it again?"

"Bad! You are bad man!" Bing-Er was so bashful. She moaned and tried to bite him gently.

Ye Xiao smiled and then got over to her with his mouth to hers.

Bing-Er exclaimed and moved her head aside.

The next moment, they were smiling to each other.

After a long time, Bing-Er asked with confusion, "Master, I... Am I really that beautiful?"

She apparently wasn't quite confident about herself.

After all, since she was cured, she had been staying inside the House of Ye. She had never walked out. In the House of Ye, there were only men. There were even no maids in the house.

Bing-Er hadn't seen any other women ever.

She couldn't compare herself to others.

It was reasonable that she wouldn't feel confident about her appearance.

"Girl, never say it again. Don't be silly!" Ye Xiao spoke decisively, "My Bing-Er, you are the No. 1, the most beautiful girl in the world! The prettiest one out of ten thousand! Pah. That is actually underestimating your beauty! It should be out of one million! In fact, it is still difficult to find out one woman who can be equally beautiful as you among one million!"

Bing-Er was so happy. She was trying to stay cool while holding the smile on her face. She couldn't hold it. She smiled like a flower as she said, "That's good. That's good. Hahaha..."

And suddenly, she thought she couldn't be that arrogant. She was a bit too happy now, so she blushed again and got in Ye Xiao's arms.

When she was in his arms, she was still giggling...

Apparently, she was so happy that she couldn't stop giggling.

She might be silly, might be not. Ye Xiao's heart was full of warmth and softness.

The girl was still pure and honest, but if she stayed in the martial world for some time...

She might change. Maybe she wouldn't change much, but if she became not so honest and pure anymore, it would be a huge regret!

Ye Xiao suddenly didn't want to let her get in the martial world so soon.

As time passed, they kept cuddling with each other, whispering sweet nothings.

They were half dressed on the bed. It looked like something happened, but in their hearts, there was purely happiness and joy. There was no ardor for sex like they had earlier.

It was late at night.

Ye Xiao said, "Get some sleep."

And then he put on clothes on Bing-Er as he said, "Don't take it off again."

Bing-Er blushed. She seemed annoyed, but she still said, "Humphed. With you, a bad man, I definitely won't take off my clothes. That would be putting myself into a tiger's mouth!"

And then she tidied up her clothes and made herself well covered.

...

Chapter 522: Bad Guests in the Dark Night

When she was fixing her clothes, she took a breath out of relief. It seemed to be her instinct.

She had a strange feeling. [I can't say it, when I want Master to have me, That is a certain thing... I actually even want to get onto him myself...]

[But as he stops now, why would I feel relieved? I should feel disappointed, shouldn't I?]

[There is a feeling in my heart, resisting him, fighting him, declining him...]

She had no idea why and what it meant!

[I like him. I just do!] She twitched her lips and said to herself in her mind.

It seemed she was fighting against her own subconsciousness!

[I like him. I want to be his woman. Isn't it a reasonable thing? Is it natural?]

[Humph! Don't interfere! Get off me!]

She was warning somebody in her heart. In fact, she didn't know

who she was warning.

It was something existing in her heart anyway!

She turned quiet. Ye Xiao got up carefully. His bed was in the inner part of the room.

It was at the middle of the night already.

...

Song Jue was sitting in the highest watchtower of the House of Ye silently. He was sensing the spiritual qi in his body that he hadn't operated for a long time. It started to form a spiritual net slowly.

He knew he couldn't fail tonight.

Song Jue was someone who had gotten along with Bing-Er the longest time except Ye Xiao. He watched Bing-Er grow. He had realized that as long as the girl could grow up in safety, she would become the most powerful support for Ye Xiao!

She would become the most important partner in Ye Xiao's life.

Song Jue believed that the girl would be the most powerful woman in Qing-Yun Realm in history!

She could reach the real peak of cultivation levels.

She would go far beyond the top of Dao Origin Stage in Qing-Yun Realm.

Song Jue was sure about it.

Because of that, he gave Ye Xiao this proposal and offered this plan. That was why he told Ye Xiao so much.

No matter how talented she was, if she grew up under protection all her life, she would never become powerful. Without experiencing storms, one would never succeed.

In the martial world, even a thief would have to survive countless of difficulties before he could live on.

And Bing-Er was going to be one of the top cultivators in the world!

[Brother Ye and me, we cannot be with Xiao Xiao for his entire life. Bing-Er can.] Song Jue thought in the breeze of the night.

[Bing-Er has to know the cruelty of the world... She has to know the truth! That's the only way!]

[Otherwise, she will only become a curse, bringing trouble to him, not help.]

[Bing-Er will step on her path tonight.]

[I want to see Xiao Xiao holding Bing-Er's hand running in the Qing-Yun Realm, traveling the universe. I want to see them invincible, with nobody daring to give them a impolite look!]

[I may not have that chance anymore, but I am willing to give up my life for them. Even if I will be misunderstood, I have to... make them a flat path! I will do whatever I can to build them a better path.]

[To live in the world, to travel in the martial world, sometimes, regretful thing happens only because one lacks of that tiny little experience.]

[Tonight, even if all manpower of Second Prince come, they won't be able to hurt us.]

[But I cannot be reckless! I have to be patient and cautious!]

At the moment, it was so quiet in the house.

All the blood guards disappeared.

Song Jue arranged it on purpose.

If Second Prince came, he would definitely strike for an instant

kill. He would definitely send all the superior cultivators to hell. When the blood guards dealt with normal soldiers, each of them could fight hundreds of soldiers. However, they were not strong enough to fight those superior cultivators so easily.

Second Prince would definitely give the order to kill everyone, as he needed to keep the whole thing a secret.

He was shameless and ignoble. He would do anything to achieve his goal. However, Ye Xiao's side only wanted a practice to let Bing-Er learn the evil of men, the evil of humans, the evil in the world...

They didn't need to put on so many brothers' lives.

That was why Song Jue told the blood guards to stay down.

He wanted to face the enemy with silence!

The clock sounded. It was midnight.

It smelled choked in the air all of a sudden.

There seemed to be figures flashing from the distance.

Song Jue could feel eight strong breaths moving fast, closer and closer.

Well, they were strong in this world. Sky Origin Stage was strong in the Land of Han-Yang, however, for Song Jue, they were like chickens and dogs that he could kill within one hit.

"Here they are." Song Jue smiled coldly. He tried to hold the killing intent in his chest as he murmured, "It turns out this Second Prince does have many good men... There are lots of Sky Origin Stage cultivators under his lead... However, he sent them all over for just one woman. What a loser... I wonder if he will cry after what will happen tonight."

"Tonight, all his good men are going to die."

"He is simply sending these men to get killed in my hands..."

"Here they come!" Almost at the same time, Ye Xiao smiled coldly in his room.

[Beauty fools wise men! Second Prince, you are asking for death yourself. Do not blame me!]

In the breeze of the night, eight men in black were like eight devils riding dark clouds. They came to the House of Ye like wild wind. - Shoot! - They had jumped over the wall and got spots to hide themselves.

They moved weightlessly and skillful. They were good at sneaky moves.

"Hmm... How come no one is here? It shouldn't be!" One of them murmured with confusion, "Such a great General's House, why is the defense force so lame?"

Another voice answered, "Nothing special. They must have lived a peaceful life for too long... What happened last night was a big one, and the House of Ye was still fine after that. The guards must be proud and relaxed. They wouldn't have any strong and careful minds."

"That's true."

"I don't care. Let's just get the job done. Just get the girl back to the prince and we are done here."

"Right. Sooner it finishes, the better."

In the dark, eight shadows sneakily moved towards Ye Xiao's yard...

...

Chapter 523: Invasion

For no apparent reason, they seemed to be familiar with everything in the General's House. They knew every path in the house, not to mention nobody stood in their way, so they directly got to Ye Xiao's yard. They took the shortest path to the yard. They seemed to know this place better than the owner, Ye Xiao. They got to the yard and they just made some hand gestures to each other. And then they jumped up to the air silently at the same time.

It looked like in the night sky of the House of Ye, eight ghosts flew up in the air.

And then they all waved their sleeves. Eight masses of dark smoke came out and spread in the yard. After a while, the yard was covered by dark smoke.

The next moment, the windows of Ye Xiao and Bing-Er's room were stabbed in every direction. Small holes were made on the window and the dark smoke was getting into the room slowly.

Whoever in the room was, would never be able to escape the smoke as it got in from all directions!

The eight men in black were apparently very skillful in such a thing. They did it so fluently. They must have practiced a lot.

On the roof, Song Jue's eyes emitted with two cold lights. He murmured, "Never thought they can be so skillful. They must have

done many dirty works for Second Prince. Pricks... Animals..."

The eight men took further moves. Two of them stayed outside the room and another two jumped up to the roof. Two more stayed around the wall, preparing to help the others leave. The rest of the two got to the door like two ghosts. They slid close to the door as they listened to the inside. They would rush in and take the girl at any second.

Apparently, two of them were about to take the girl. After they got her, they left. If anybody stopped them, the two on the roof would get down and fight. That was the first wave. The two on the wall would help others leave. The two staying outside the room would be the vanguards!

Such thorough plan and perfect cooperation.

At the moment, the two on the door were listening to the inside. They were trying to make sure what was going on in the room.

Suddenly, their eyes lit up. One of them stayed still, while the other reached out one hand and pushed on the door.

The next moment, the bolt on the door was silently broken into pieces.

They slightly pushed the door and it was opened.

[That went so well!] The eight of them all thought so.

Ye Nantian was the No. 1 of the military in Kingdom of Chen. As the information stated, there was no Sky Origin Stage cultivator in his house, but there were some retired soldiers. Those were strong forces. Those soldiers had survived hundreds of battles in the war, and they were much more sensitive to dangers than many top cultivators.

The eight men had done so many things like this, but they didn't dare to be reckless dealing with the House of Ye. They had done lots of preparations before they came. The reason why they could find the path to Ye Xiao's room was that they had done perfect preparation, and there was no guards trying to stop them.

They were, after all, strong cultivators. The House of Ye wasn't on guard, but even if there were guards around, they wouldn't be able to fight the eight Sky Origin Stage cultivators! They were just a bunch of retired soldiers after all!

However, for the eight men, it was always better to get the job done smoothly!

At this moment, in the darkness, a weak and exquisite voice sounded, "Who... Who is that?"

The voice was shaking.

Apparently, the girl who spoke was most terrified.

She was trembling.

At the same time, something sounded. - Clang! - A flashing white light with a stream of cold qi lit up in the dark. The shiny white light revealed a most beautiful shaped shadow of a girl.

Bing-Er!

"Hmm? Why didn't this girl fainted? That..." The man who seemed to be the leader humphed.

The girl's voice was the only thing they could hear.

There seemed no other people moving in the room anymore!

One of the other men in black quickly got in the room and checked around. He then felt relieved and said, "This girl is spirited. She is a gifted one. She doesn't get infected by our smoke! That foppish prick has fainted out. Not a problem now. Everything will go smoothly!"

The man thought that he knew everything, however, he didn't know that the girl had a huge mass of energy inside her body. Not to mention the small tricks here, even the most powerful poisonous smoke couldn't affect her.

The man beside the door felt relieved. He then spoke in a low voice, "Little girl. Shhh. Be quiet. Don't panic. Be good. Just come with uncles. We will take you to a fantastic place."

He was exactly like a pedophile!

Bing-Er was terrified. Her pretty eyes were blinking with fear, "I... No... I don't want to..."

And then she shouted, "Brother Xiao... Master... Master... Where are you... Answer me..."

However, no matter how she exclaimed, nobody responded to her.

The House of Ye was so big, yet she seemed to be the only person here alone.

"Quiet!" the man in black shouted in a deep voice. Apparently, he was a bit pissed. He was angry that the girl didn't accept his kind words. He was afraid the girl would draw over the guards and put them into a unnecessary fight. They didn't fear the guards in the House of Ye, but they also didn't want to get in a fight.

When they realized nobody in the House of Ye would answer her, the man by the door smiled vilely. "This is the famous General's House, huh? Those are the soldiers of the No. 1 Military God Ye Nantian? Heh, heh. Such a man, he actually never lost a battle ever. What a miracle in Kingdom of Chen!"

Before he finished talking, he had reached out his hand to grab Bing-Er.

Bing-Er exclaimed, and then she swayed her sword with instinct. A beautiful stream of cold qi burst with splendid lights.

The man in black exclaimed and hurriedly took back his hand. However, because it was so beyond his expectation, he couldn't move quickly enough. His figure was cut, and blood came out from his finger.

This man was in the Sky Origin Stage, and he should be much stronger than Bing-Er. He thought that since Bing-Er was just a concubine of a foppish stupid young lord, so she must be so weak. Even though she was talented and didn't faint out in the smoke, she was just a woman.

When Bing-Er showed her sword, he didn't pay attention. When he reached out his hand to Bing-Er, he didn't use any martial art.

However, unexpectedly, this weak and soft lady knew how to fight and she was a superior cultivator!

While the man in black was reckless, the girl was being cautious. Even though the man was much stronger, he was cut by Bing-Er.

He nearly died!

...

Chapter 524: Exquisite Beauty!

The man in black was cut in his finger, causing blood to ooze out from the wound. He was surprised and didn't even think about defending. The sword in Bing-Er's hand was a rare divine weapon. Even though Bing-Er was weak, the sword had broken down the man in black's spiritual shield!

He felt pain in his hand, and he raged in anger, "Bitch! You asked for this!"

He then moved his both hands with light blue glows. Apparently, he decided to use his true power now; he didn't want to restrain any of it.

However, when the light blue glow showed up, his eyes blinked. And then his face was full of astonishment.

In the light of the blue glow, what showed up in his sight was a pretty girl with a perfect shape. She was wearing white clothes like snow. Her hair was long, reaching down on her shoulders, and her face was so beautiful like she was a faery.

At the moment, her exquisite face was full of fear.

Fear.

However, the terrified face was so delicate and charming. She looked so pure, elegant and exquisite!

He couldn't stop wanting to protect her and love her.

He couldn't think of bullying her anymore.

In her pretty small hand, there was a snow-white divine sword.

He couldn't feel the threat from her at all!

She was standing there with fear in her eyes. Her beautiful lips were shut, and her entire body was trembling. However, her beauty was still without a doubt!

"Now I understand why the Second Prince would have that stupid idea in this important time. Such a woman is a unique beauty in the universe. How can he not be touched! How can he not want to have her!"

The two men in black who had seen the beauty of Bing-Er were both shocked. They were all having the same thought.

While they were blank for a second, Bing-Er asked with worry, "What did you do... What did you do to my Brother Xiao?"

When she exclaimed just now, Ye Xiao didn't respond, although he was so close to her. Bing-Er was afraid there was something wrong with him, so she was worried like hell. She didn't care about what would happen to her, instead, she was just worried

about Ye Xiao.

"Your little brother is fine. But you are not going to be fine. Of course, it is not a bad thing though. It is a great thing." The man in black laughed. With no reason, he talked more gently. He even talked like he had a bright future for the girl.

In front of this gorgeous woman, he seemed to be touched too...

Bing-Er wasn't experienced, but she wasn't stupid. She wouldn't believe it. She thought for a while and then rushed into the inner room for Ye Xiao.

The two men in black flashed and got in her way.

That was so fast.

Bing-Er was shocked. And then she realized, [They are too strong. I cannot defeat them.]

And then she thought of something else, [They are here for me. If I leave this place, Master will be fine.]

She made up her mind!

Under the light of the blue glow, Bing-Er's face was extremely beautiful—she looked so pure and smart. The two men in black were shocked again as they stopped there for a few seconds, dazed.

While they were blank, Bing-Er shouted and then moved aside. - Shoot! - She actually jumped to the yard all of a sudden.

It was so smooth and fast in such a beautiful way.

The two men were shocked by the beauty of Bing-Er. They saw Bing-Er get away, but because she was so beautiful while jumping, they failed to stop her in time. They just wanted to watch her longer.

Superior cultivators fight within seconds. If Bing-Er was in equal capability with the two men, they would have been killed dozens of times already because of the seconds they were blank. Even now, as Bing-Er had the Ice Soul Sword, as long as she could get a perfect position to strike, she could very likely kill them. However, Bing-Er wasn't experienced enough. She couldn't seize the opportunity!

"Master... Uncle Song..." Bing-Er started to shout as soon as she got off the room. She sounded worried, "You... Please come..."

She had just shouted, and the two men in black on the roof had jumped down off the roof.

One of them laughed and said, "Our chief and our third brother actually failed this time. They couldn't even catch a little girl. I wonder what they will have to say..."

At the same time, the other men from other spots also came over.

They were all laughing in a deep voice.

The wind blew the clouds in the sky. Dark clouds flew away and the moon splashed the moon light to the ground.

It splashed on Bing-Er.

Under the moonlight, the eight men all saw Bing-Er's face.

White clothes, exquisite face... every part of her was perfect. Even though she was panicking, she looked gorgeous!

Her eyes were like paintings. Language was poor to describe her beauty!

She was exactly like a faery!

She was a unique beauty in the universe!

At the moment, the eight of them all stared at Bing-Er's face. They suddenly forgot what they were here for.

They all had the same thought inside their hearts, [If I take this beautiful girl away and give her to people like Second Prince, it will be ruining her... What a waste!]

However, the thought only lasted for seconds. They were Second Prince's lowly dogs after all. They had gone so far in this mission now, so they had to finish it.

They could only sigh and think, [What a waste of such unique and exquisite beauty! What a waste!]

They had done many things like this before, but they had never regretted like this ever.

"You... Stay away! I... I am so powerful!" Bing-Er's sword was shaking, and her face was pale. She kept stepping back. Although she was determined, she still felt scared. After all, she was facing eight enemies at one time, not to mention each of them was stronger than her. How could she not be terrified?

"Little girl, let's go. No matter what, you won't get away from us tonight! Don't waste your energy to fight. If your pretty face is hurt, it will be the most pitiful thing in history. Please think more about it, lady!"

The leader of the men spoke from a higher position to Bing-Er. However, in the other seven's ears, their chief sounded so soft and gentle at the moment.

Most unbelievably, the other seven men in black all agreed with the chief. None of them thought he was talking nonsense. What he just said seemed to be normal and necessary.

It was right to be soft and gentle while talking to a beautiful girl like Bing-Er.

...

Chapter 525: Bing-Er's First Fight!

"No way!" Bing-Er shook her head. "You! Who are you? Why are you doing this to me?"

"Girl, you don't need to know who we are. It won't make any difference." The leading guy sighed. "We are following orders. That is all. We have no choice. Lady, if you want to blame somebody, blame your beauty!"

"My beauty?" Bing-Er showed them a pale face and she spoke furiously, "Do you mean... being beautiful is a sin?"

"It is even more than that. In this world, if you don't have a strong power but only a beautiful face, it will not only be your sin, but also lead to the collapse of your clan!"

The man sighed.

Bing-Er was confused and terrified. "So... Beauty is a sin?"

"Beauty is sin. When you are seen by a powerful man, you have sinned!" The man in black didn't want to hurt her, but he couldn't help saying more.

"The reason for all this... is that somebody wants me?" Bing-Er suddenly forgot the fear in her heart. She was raging with flames of anger. "Do you think men can forcibly occupy a lady and her heart?"

The man in black sighed. "Girl, in some people's eyes, women have no feelings. They don't need feelings. Women are items that can be robbed... This is the world! It is sad and it is helpless!"

Bing-Er started to tremble.

However, she was not terrified. She was furious.

In her beautiful eyes, there was anger!

[There actually are such shameless and vile people in the world?]

She was holding the sword tighter and tighter.

"Why do you talk that much to her? Chief, let's just bring her back. The night is long and anything could happen!" another man said.

The leader sighed and said, "Get her!"

He gave the order.

The man who was closest to Bing-Er moved and tried to grab her with his big hands.

Sky Origin Stage cultivators weren't some ordinary men. The

blue glow shined up and he fiercely got to Bing-Er.

Bing-Er raged up and shouted angrily, "So you are telling me... when you do such a filthy and disgusting thing, you still have conscience? Don't you feel guilty?"

"The world belongs to strong! Strength means everything! Wealth or beauty, they all belong to the strongest!" The man in black humphed. "Girl, this is the world! This is the martial world! Get used to it!"

The man in black had rushed over to her.

Bing-Er was so angry that she forgot about fear in her heart. She moved aside and dodged. She was light weighted. The man grabbed empty air, but the man in black didn't stop. He kept grabbing to her.

The fight was short. The man in black finally realized that the girl was talented. She was young but powerful. However, she was no higher than Earth Origin Stage, far beneath his level. He thought that even though she could escape a few strikes, she wouldn't last long. As such, he kept rushing to her to grab her.

The other men in black all had the same opinion. They didn't go help him. They thought it would become a joke to get more than one of the men to deal with the little girl who was no higher than Earth Origin Stage.

Bing-Er saw the man in black was getting closer. She didn't move away this time; instead, she shouted and then swayed her sword, which caused a mass of silver light to splash over!

When she made this strike, she was fearless. Her chest was filled with hatred as she gritted with her teeth. Her face looked so cold.

She only felt that a feeling of violence had filled up her heart! It was going to vent out!

Splendor Covers the World!

That was the name of this strike.

Under the moonlight, Bing-Er was wearing white clothes. She danced like an faery as her long sword turned into a stream of splendor that shined like the moon. Bing-Er was like a faery of ice, descending from the moon!

The sword strike was fierce and fatal, but it looked so beautiful! It obsessed people and shook people's souls! The men couldn't feel the danger in it at all. They were immersed in the beauty of it and couldn't get out.

All of a sudden, the silver light covered the man in black. He was totally under the splendor.

The sword light was cold; the sword breath howled. It was such a splendid scene! Beautiful! Wonderful!

It was actually such a powerful strike!

It had never shown up in this world ever!

When the man saw this attack, he was shocked and terrified. He exclaimed and tried to step back, however, it was too late. Several strides of sword wounds appeared on his body.

His clothes was cut into pieces, which made him look like a beggar!

Everyone was stunned.

They could never imagine that such a weak and soft girl was actually so vicious in a fight. She showed no mercy! She just wanted to kill!

The man who got cut was the fifth brother among the eight men. That sword strike could totally chop him into eighty pieces if she was a bit stronger!

Bing-Er was just level 4 of the Earth Origin Stage, while her opponent was in the Sky Origin Stage. That was a huge difference. Even though her sword art was splendid, it shouldn't end like this. Bing-Er's Ice Soul Sword was specially designed by Ye Xiao, not to mention it was a divine weapon. It was never some ordinary thing. The sword art was surely powerful, so was the sword, but it couldn't completely break the defensive shield of that man.

However, the man was seriously injured!

"The chick is unbelievable! Her sword art is marvelous!" the fifth man who was attacked exclaimed.

"You are beaten by a little girl, and you still shouted like that! Stop being so shameless! Stop shouting!" The leader was not so happy about it. "Long night! No more martial world morality anymore now! Go get her! All of you! Get it done quickly!"

As the order was given, three other men moved over to her at the same time.

They all started to attack Bing-Er.

The men in black all knew that Bing-Er didn't have a high cultivation—she was no higher than Earth Origin Stage. Her sword art was brilliant, but it was difficult to turn over the fight. It was only a matter of time for them to capture her. If her sword wasn't that incredibly sharp, the fifth man wouldn't get hurt.

Bing-Er was determined to keep fighting. She kept her mouth shut and swayed the sword like crazy. - Clang... -

Sounds of rain storms resounded in the air.

Bing-Er was driven by the anger in her heart. Even though three Sky Origin Stage cultivator were attacking her at the same time, she defended three, five, eight, over a dozen strikes!

[I belong to Master! You are not going to take me!]

[Whoever forces me to leave Master is destroying my life.]

[I would even sacrifice my life to kill him!]

...

Chapter 526: Murderous Sword Strike!

When she thought about ‘I would even sacrifice my life to kill him’, the murderous thought that rose from the bottom of her heart was raging.

All of a sudden.

Bing-Er found that... she had a weird thought in her head.

It was an image—a clear image.

In the image, there was a girl in black who had the same face as Bing-Er. She jumped up high and reached out one hand. The hand was so fast that it seemed to break the physical distance. It grabbed on a man’s head and smashed it into pieces!

When that image showed up in her head, the murderous qi was raging inside her. It filled her chest fast!

She was stepping back under the attacks from the three enemies. At the moment, she was only forcibly defending herself. However, when that thought appeared in her head, a special qi came out inside her.

The three men who were attacking her suddenly felt something changed. They felt dangerous all of a sudden!

They were frightened. It was their instincts that warned them about the fatal danger.

While they were trying to make it fast and end it soon, the girl suddenly moved aside. The next moment, a sword was shot to them in high speed!

That was a simple sword strike!

Just a direct stab!

Nothing special!

But it was fast. It was extremely fast!

It was so fast that no one could catch it!

It was like lightning!

It came from nowhere and was shot to nowhere! It was vividly there but difficult to touch or to catch!

- Puff! -

It was so fast and it aimed at the middle of the three men. It flew so fast and hit on the chest of the man in the middle!

The man in the middle only felt it cold on the chest.

He couldn't believe that he was hit by the sword.

He looked down to check the wound. The snow-white sword was dragged out of his chest already, and blood was running out from the wound. The sword was actually still clean and white, without even a single speck of blood on it.

The man couldn't believe it. He moaned and it sounded inside his throat. He failed to say anything, and instead he only fell down to the floor slowly.

When his head touched the floor, he stopped breathing. In his eyes, there was surprise and shock. He still couldn't believe it!

Not only him, all the other men in black couldn't believe it. They were all stunned.

They would have never thought that one of them would die in this fight, while they were fighting someone who was a lot weaker than any of them!

Bing-Er nailed it by the first strike. Blood flowed on the floor, causing her to feel sick. She wanted to throw up, however, that feeling disappeared soon. Another feeling, which was full of violence, destruction and hatred, was raging in her chest!

In her head, the image of that woman in black showed up again.

It was her in black suit. She jumped up to the sky and rushed down to the floor, hitting on the crowd from hundreds of meters high!

That moment, Bing-Er could see the disgusting faces of the people in the crowd!

That girl in black was falling to the crowd. Before she touched the earth, she became cold-blooded and she swayed her two hands. Countless splendid lights appeared and lit up the surroundings.

Hundreds of people in the crowd suddenly burst into dew. After a while, everything returned to silence!

What could be seen was all the enemies exploded when they were touched by the light. Fresh blood splashed everywhere, and the place was covered by blood and bones at once. None of the hundreds of men managed to escape!

They all died!

At that moment, the girl in black stood on the ground again. She shouted and then flew up again. - Shoot! - She disappeared.

The next moment, Bing-Er felt that she was moving on the clouds.

She was actually flying in the sky!

She?

Bing-Er was frightened.

[Why would I feel that?

Is that... me?]

She didn't have time to think about that anymore. The raging feeling of violence and destruction was getting more and more drastic! It almost filled up her chest. It seemed to be seeping through her entire body, and it was about to explode. She felt like it was going to rage upon herself.

She wasn't sure if when it burst out, she could still be the same girl like she was now. Maybe she would become another person by then...

A strong feeling was rising up...

Nobody knew that Bing-Er's eyes were turning to some strange dark color.

The crazy murderous thought was still growing.

She could feel that there was an enormous mass of energy that was coming out from her body!

It was a strong mass energy that could destroy the entire world when it burst!

If that energy burst, not only the men in black, but also the entire Land of Han-Yang could be destroyed by her within one hit!

That was her instinct!

It came from nowhere! She didn't have a reason for it!

However, she trusted her instinct! She was sure that it was true!

The men in black all exclaimed, "Brother Six!"

They gathered over.

However, that six man couldn't answer them anymore. He died.

The men in black saw their brother die. They were furious. They shouted, "Bxtch! We didn't want to hurt you. We showed mercy in every move! How dare you! Merciless bxtch! "

Bing-Er was immersed in that weird and fantastic image.

She clearly saw that woman in black open her eyes. In her eyes, there was full of coldness and terror.

Killing intent surged out from her eyes, and it was so murderous that it could even wipe the world!

At the same time, a strong power was rushing into her body through her right hand, from which she held the sword. The sword suddenly started shaking. It was making some strange sound! It was like the sword had been thirsty for such a long time, and it was cheering for the blood it was going to drain!

"I will kill you all!"

Bing-Er gritted her teeth and spoke word by word in a deep voice.

The snow-white sword was raised up again!

...

Song Jue had been watching it all night. He was there to make sure Bing-Er's safety. When he saw Bing-Er slaughter that man in black, he was astonished!

[What...

What is going on down there?]

Song Jue had fought with Bing-Er for an entire afternoon. He knew so well about Bing-Er's power, especially her sword art!

[Why... That man in black looked so fierce and strong. He should be in Sky Origin Stage. Why would he get instant killed by Bing-Er?]

...

Chapter 527: No One Leaves!

[Besides...]

[That man in black died. It's not a big deal. When Ye Xiao shows up or I show up, he will die anyway. It's not a big issue that Bing-Er killed him. However, she doesn't feel uncomfortable about killing somebody for the first time!]

She calmed down immediately!

That is so weird!

More than that, she was getting even more violent!

She had only killed one man, yet it actually created the phenomenon of killings!]

Song Jue couldn't believe it. He came up with a thought that he wouldn't believe. [Is she born to be a figure in the martial world?]

[That's enough!] Song Jue and Ye Xiao both had the same thought.

Bing-Er had done a great job tonight. It was beyond their expectation!

In Song Jue's plan, Bing-Er should be captured and truly

experience the evilness of those men. As long as he could kill those men before they really hurt Bing-Er, everything would be fine. Ye Xiao would show up and comfort the girl, and Song Jue didn't need to do anything after that. However, now his great plan could never work!

Bing-Er would only need to be slightly guided, as she had such strong mental prowess.

In Ye Xiao's plan, Bing-Er wouldn't even need to be captured. If he knew Song Jue's plan, they would burst into a fight for sure!

In Ye Xiao's mind, Bing-Er belonged to himself!

He wouldn't allow anybody to touch her, not to mention bully her!

Captured? That must be joking!

The seven men in black got over together. In their eyes, there was no more hesitation; there was only hatred! In the sky, black clothes flew as endless killing intent rushed over to Bing-Er fiercely!

Bing-Er kept thinking about the situation; she knew she couldn't defend this directly. She moved aside to escape the attack. The long sword in her hand was shaking even drastically. That mass of fierce power was so close to burst and sweep the enemies!

At this moment...

A bland voice sounded, "You pieces of sh*ts. How dare you make troubles in my place. You even want to take my woman. I guess you have lived too long and you are so desperately willing to die. Okay then. Go to hell you all!"

As the voice sounded, the three men in front of the seven moaned and fell straight down to the ground!

The other four was terrified and they started to move back.

They looked to where the voice sounded.

They only saw a young man in white clothes. He looked handsome while wearing a light robe. His face was cold, and he kept his hands on his back. He walked slowly out from the room. In his eyes, there was only cold killing intent.

On his face, there was a bland smile.

That smile didn't seem caring at all. It was like he would kill the entire world without any hesitation.

They were frightened by that smile.

"Ye Xiao!" the man who led the group exclaimed.

"Master!" As Ye Xiao showed up, Bing-Er called him loudly. In her voice, there was relief. The concern, the worries, and her love for Ye Xiao were all shown in it.

The fierce mass of power that was about to burst out suddenly disappeared when she saw Ye Xiao.

After that, her entire body felt weak and sore. She staggered and nearly fell down; she couldn't hold it anymore.

Ye Xiao moved over fast through two men in black. The two of them didn't even have time to react, and Ye Xiao had passed them by. He held Bing-Er on the waist and held her in his arms.

Ye Xiao moved so fast like ghost. The seven men in black were all shocked. They felt cold in hearts. They were more terrified than earlier now.

They couldn't believe there was a man in the Land of Han-Yang who could get pass between the two of them so casually. He treated the two men like nothing, and the two of them couldn't do anything about it!

They were being highly cautious at that moment.

[What is that? What martial art is that?]

The three men who had been hit down by Ye Xiao's needles were astonished. They nearly forgot about the pain on them, having

their eyes wide opened.

"Don't worry. I am here. Just take some rests," Ye Xiao spoke to Bing-Er gently.

"Master, it is great... that you are fine!" Bing-Er spoke in a low voice, "I was worried that they might have hurt you..." As she spoke, her eyes turned red. She was about to burst in tears.

She had been thinking that she might not be able to see her master. She knew she was worried about that, but she didn't want to admit it. The desperation drove her so hard that the extreme power in her was pushed out. Now that she was relieved, she just felt like crying. She just wanted to vent the sad feelings in her heart.

She was such a weak little girl at the moment.

As she was relieved, she also got a powerful support beside her now. It seemed nothing in the world could threaten her now!

Thinking about that, Bing-Er was even weaker than she should be!

"I am surely fine. How can these d*ckheads hurt me. Bing-Er, you suffered too much." Ye Xiao tightly held her in his arms and comforted her gently like no one was around them. He then turned over and looked at those men in their eyes. He became fierce again. "Don't worry. None of these bastards can leave! I will never let

them go! Look how well they bonded to each other. Brothers, I will give you the honor to go to hell together! I surely will!"

"Ye Xiao! What dirty tricks did you use to hurt my brothers?" The leader didn't know what truly happened to the three wounded men. He only heard Ye Xiao talk, and then three of his brothers fell off. It was quite weird for him really.

Things were going against the men in black. Another scary voice sounded, "Is it really so important how your brothers got hurt? No! Not really! The most important thing was that you are all going to die tonight. None of you can survive this. None of you could leave here! I am telling you!"

They looked up to where the voice sounded. A man stood in the sky. He put his hands on the back. While he was talking, he paced down from up in the sky.

It looked like it was not the air he was stepping on, but instead solid stairs!

He was exactly Song Jue.

...

Chapter 528: The Super Master Song!

Song Jue hadn't shown his true power for many years. Not that he didn't want to, he just wasn't able to. Now that he had been cured by a secret powerful man, he was fully recovered. At the moment, a fight was ahead of him, and deep down his heart, he was full of agitation that only cultivators at his level had.

He couldn't wait to show what he could do with such a great opportunity.

What he said was just the beginning. It was exactly what he wanted, and he was so happy about it. He acted casually, like he didn't care about it at all. He just wanted to act like a super master.

No matter what, what he had done just now was fierce and full of power!

Whoever knew about martial art or martial world would thought that he must be a super powerful cultivator!

Only people that was strong like Ye Xiao would sigh speechlessly. [I never knew such an old man can still put on such a play... How pretentious... It is somehow so annoying to me... I am the most overwhelming figure in this place now!]

"Pacing the Void!"

The leader man in black exclaimed. His voice was shaking!

There is an old saying, ‘such a bliss to be ignorant’. The leader of them was apparently not that ignorant. For a man like him, what did Pacing the Void mean? That was some skill that even top Sky Origin Stage cultivators couldn’t handle.

What terrified him the most was that he knew that man pacing in the sky. He was the steward of the House of Ye, Song Jue!

Who could imagine that the steward of this house was actually a superior cultivator who was beyond the cultivation limit of this realm! With such a great master, the House of Ye was not only safe, but also invincible! It wouldn’t be difficult for the House of Ye to even conquer the world!

[What the hell is this?]

What he needed to know was that he and his brothers were truly in bad luck this time. They were actually trying to capture someone from a house like this, which was protected by such strong figures! They were actually trying to take away a woman!

The seven men felt ridiculous now.

[Sh*t. Are we out of our minds?]

[How could such thing happen on us? Unbelievable! What a bad luck!]

[I guess there is nothing much we can do now, isn't it?]

[We are Second Prince's men. Shall we tell them the truth and scare them by that? Maybe they will let it go?]

[Will they? No!]

[If Second Prince knows about this right now, he will abandon us immediately. If the king knows it, he will probably kill Second Prince to beg for forgiveness. Steward Song is a super powerful figure in our world right now!]

"You... You are the... steward? Steward Song?" One of the men in black couldn't believe it. He asked, hoping that he would get a negative answer.

What if he was some super powerful master from somewhere else but looked exactly the same as Song Jue?

They knew it was barely possible, but they still wanted that hope!

Song Jue raised his head up and arrogantly spoke, "Who else could I be?"

The seven men looked at each other. The three lying on the floor felt even weaker now.

The other four who weren't hurt yet all showed complex

expressions in their eyes.

"How bold of you guys!" Song Jue stood there with his hands on the back. He acted exactly like a super master cultivator. He looked down upon them and spoke in a casual tone, "You guys really got guts! I haven't made any strike for many years. Is the world ridiculous like this now? A few rats actually rushed over to my house and tried to capture one of us! I truly cannot understand how this world runs anymore! Not anymore!"

A terrifying powerful cultivator—Steward Song—was right in front of them. Besides, Ye Xiao was there too. Nobody knew how strong he could be. They felt there was barely any chance for them to survive.

"Fine. We are f*cked!" The leader sounded gloomy. He said, "Do what you want on us. Kill us or what."

While he was speaking, his fingers moved fast and made some strange sounds.

Before he finished talking, the four of them rushed up and fled to different directions!

[House of Ye is unbelievably powerful.

We have to inform Second Prince as soon as we can!

We only need one man return!

They can capture us, but there is no evidence showing that we work for the Second Prince. There is still room to negotiate on!]

What a good thought, but reality was cruel!

Ye Xiao humphed and waved his right hand. Two streams of cold lights struck over like lightnings!

Two men who just flew up in the air suddenly felt torpid somewhere on their bodies. They lost control of their bodies and then fell down to the ground at once. They fell on the floor so hard and couldn't get up.

The two flying needles were stabbed into their dantian.

They weren't able to use any energy to move anymore as their dantian was broken.

To capture them alive, Ye Xiao didn't use his Demonic Needles, instead, he only used ordinary needles. However, even so, because of the cold qi on the needles, the two of them turned pale on the faces right away.

They looked at Ye Xiao like looking at ghost!

The famous foppish useless young lord had just waved his hand and two men actually fell down and couldn't do anything now!

[How did he do it?]

[For so many years, this foppish young lord has been pretending all the time?]

The men in black saw Song Jue like they saw a god who was invincible in fights. When they saw Ye Xiao, they seemed to be looking at a ghost. He was unpredictable and also invincible!

Ye Xiao walked over to one of them and stepped on one man's chest. He blandly spoke, "Do you really think you can come and go as you wish? Huh?"

He then pushed his foot. The man under his foot screamed and spat out lots of blood!

Ye Xiao was angry. It was a heavy stamp!

On the other side, Song Jue wasn't so casual when he got on them. When two of those men ran, he didn't hesitate. He pushed his hand fast and a cyan glowing hand appeared in the air. It then turned into a running tiger, rushing out to one of the two running men!

- Crack! -

Song Jue hadn't use this power for many years, so he couldn't

hold back even for a bit. It turned out that his strike was a little too powerful. When that man was hit by that glowing figure, his body couldn't take that energy—his body suddenly exploded into flesh and blood on the ground!

...

Chapter 529: Captured at One Time!

Almost at the same time, Song Jue flew up in the air. He rushed out over twenty meters ahead in an instant, and then he reached out one hand from his sleeve. He grabbed on the head of the leader and shouted, "Down you go!"

- Crack! -

The big head of that man was smashed in Song Jue's hand!

It looked like a broken watermelon at the moment!

Song Jue looked at his own hand, speechless.

He looked at the flesh and blood on the ground and couldn't say a word.

When he saw Bing-Er and Ye Xiao, who were about to throw up, he shrugged and laughed. "Careless! I was careless! I pushed it too hard. Look what I did... My bad..."

Ye Xiao was speechless.

He really didn't know what to say to him! [Old bastard, putting on a heroical show for so long and then turning the entire place into a slaughter house full of flesh and blood. Who said the older one is always the wise one? That is so not right!]

"Orhhh..." Bing-Er wanted to throw up.

For a girl, such a bloody scene would definitely cause discomfort on her. Whoever could be indifferent to it was definitely sick. Bing-Er nearly threw up but she didn't show any other negative conditions. She was good!

Ye Xiao looked at Bing-Er. He saw her disgusted but not so badly.

Her eyes were filled with coldness. There was no anxiety or fear in them.

It seemed she was not so repellant to the bloody scene.

In fact, she was even a bit cold and vicious.

Ye Xiao felt relaxed, but he sighed. He thought, [The girl can really fit in the martial world. She got used to this bloody scene so fast. However... It is too faster than I wish. When I first experienced things like this, it took me half a day to get over it. I even threw up badly!]

"Uncle Song, look what you did. It is a mess in the yard..." Ye Xiao pointed at the yard and said, "This... This is disgusting. It is fine if you do it outside. I don't see it, I don't get annoyed. But this is our place. How much work should we put on to clean all this up. Even after we clean it, it won't feel good..."

Song Jue knew that he did something wrong. He looked regretful.

What he wanted to do was to act heroic and build a great image in Bing-Er and Ye Xiao's hearts. However, it ended up in him screwed it up. He made the place full of blood and flesh. It was ugly. However, he said, "B*llshit... A few men died with blood splashed away... So what. We are going to kill them sooner or later... Better get them killed soon..."

He didn't even know how to make it up himself...

Ye Xiao was speechless about it. It wasn't a big deal anyway. He looked at the five that didn't die yet, then he asked Bing-Er, "Girl, what will you do to the rest of them?"

"Master... You are asking me... What I want to do with these five?" Bing-Er looked at him with confusion in her eyes. She pointed at herself on the nose with her pretty little finger. She was so cute right now.

She was so adorable! Extremely adorable! Ye Xiao couldn't think of a proper word to describe how adorable she was!

Bing-Er never thought that Ye Xiao would let her make the decision on how to deal with the five men.

She never thought that she could control people's lives!

"Yes. There were eight men in black tonight. Three of them died." Ye Xiao blandly spoke, "They are here to take you away and hurt you. As the victim, what do you want to do to them? You make the call."

Bing-Er understood what was going on now, however, she was hesitant; she didn't know what to do.

The five men lit up their eyes.

[The girl is apparently naive and pure. She hasn't experienced a lot. She may be tough. She would fight desperately for her master. That is reasonable. Girls like this always have one weak point. They are always soft-hearted.]

[If she let us go tonight, we can survive this.]

[We lost three brothers. We are angry and sad, but as long as the five of us live on, we will have the chance to take revenge someday!]

[Even though we know how powerful they are, and we may not have the chance to take revenge in this life, but we can still live! Who wants to die when there is a chance to live!]

Ye Xiao exactly knew what they were thinking. He blandly spoke, "Whoever dares to speak one word, you five die immediately."

The five men were just about to say something to beg for

forgiveness, yet Ye Xiao stopped them. They had to keep their mouths shut.

None of them suspected Ye Xiao's words. They might ruin the only chance they had to survive. They all looked at Bing-Er, hoping the beautiful and nice girl would give them a chance to live!

Bing-Er didn't keep them waiting. She only hesitated for a few seconds before it reminded her what they had said earlier.

'Beauty is a sin!' 'It will not only be your sin, but also lead to the collapse of your clan!'

She turned to them and asked, "I asked you. Don't you feel ashamed and guilty when you do things like this? Can you be relieved? You told me that only the strongest owns the rules. Now that I am the stronger one, what do you have in your mind? Let me ask you something. How many times have you done things like this before?"

The five men looked at each other. They didn't know what to say.

If they didn't answer, they would die. If they answered it with honesty, they would also die, because it would piss her off!

Should they answer it with lies?

Song Jue's face looked solemn, while Ye Xiao looked fierce.

They were both experienced men; they already knew the truth.

If they said it was their first time, even the girl wouldn't believe it, not to mention the two powerful men. If they said they had done many such acts, they would die for it.

"There has been many times." The new leader looked gloomy.
"We follow orders. There is nothing we can do."

"Many times huh..." Bing-Er's eyes were filled with sorrow. That meant many good girls had been destroyed while they were in their most beautiful age!

...

Chapter 530: Extreme Sin!

"Follow orders? Under commands..." Bing-Er asked, "Whose orders? Whose commands?"

The leader of those men rolled his eyes. Ye Xiao and Song Jue were looking at him with wicked smile. He felt terrified. He didn't dare to lie. He said, "It's... Second Prince."

"Oh, it's him? You said you have done this many times, right? So you did it for Second Prince? Why does he want so many girls?" Song Jue asked with curiosity.

Steward Song, who was experienced, didn't understand it.

No matter how randy Second Prince was, he had limited energy after all. How could he have so many girls?

If a prince had dozens of wives, he would definitely lose the opportunity to get the throne. This Second Prince had a good reputation in public after all. There wasn't many news about Second Prince capturing women, and he didn't have many wives. He was normal. The man in black didn't give a persuasive answer.

"You may not know a lot. Second Prince sent us to take some women back, not only because he felt like doing so, but also because he could ask for money and supports from doing it. He had a secret place. It is called Voluptuous Flower Building. In that place..."

He had made a good start, so he didn't hesitate anymore. He started to tell them everything he knew about it.

"The girls we captured are not all he likes... As long as somebody in his group likes her, he would send people to capture her. When the girls are captured, they will be shown to Second Prince in groups of fifty. Second Prince will try to pick someone he likes among the fifty girls. He will keep the ones he likes for himself, or pick some of them as gifts to his men..."

"Those he doesn't like will be left in Voluptuous Flower Building... as... as prostitutes... It has been so many years. Second Prince sent his trusted man to run the business. The girls are pretty, so they get a lot of money from them... The officials in the court will go to that place sometimes. Second Prince tries to win their support by giving them privilege in that place. Most of his money comes from this place too."

Ye Xiao felt a mass of anger burst in the chest.

[This is it!]

"Second Prince is the king's son. In the Kingdom of Chen, he is in quite an important position. Why does he have to earn money from such dirty business? Isn't it too complicated?" Song Jue was confused.

"He is the king's son indeed. He gets quite a lot money from the royal house, but that money is only enough for his daily expense.

To gain supports from the officials, to hold some secret activities, to pay the men from noble clans, it is far less than enough..."

It was Ye Xiao who answered Song Jue, "All in all, Second Prince doesn't want to just be a prince. He wants more. That is why he tries everything he can to earn money. The king has announced that princes are forbidden to get private connections to officials. Princes shouldn't take bribe. Once it is found out, he will be kept in captivity. He will lose everything he has..."

"Second Prince wants to do something big. He needs money. He needs a lot of money. However, I could never imagine that a prince would actually run a brothel!"

"That brothel is actually his most powerful tool to earn money! That is such a ridiculous and sad joke!"

Ye Xiao spat with disdainfulness. - Pah! -

Voluptuous Flower Building. What a clangorous name. Whoever had a rich family and loved beauty hunting knew about this place so well. They had two branches just in the capital.

Every big city of Kingdom of Chen had at least one branch of it. Some of them had several!

Second Prince was dirty, but he did successfully gather a huge amount of money!

"A noble born prince... a son of the king, actually forces women to sell their bodies just to earn him money? Money for him to spend lavishly? To devote for his own ambition?" Bing-Er couldn't believe it.

"That is actually a prince?"

Her small hands were held so tight into fists. She was apparently extremely furious at the moment.

"How many girls are in the Voluptuous Flower Building in the capital?" Ye Xiao asked.

The man in black trembled.

He understood why Ye Xiao asked this question immediately!

As long as he knew the capacity of the Voluptuous Flower Building in the capital, he could figure out how many branches it had in the entire kingdom and what capacity it had was!

The man in black knew that Ye Xiao wanted more than just the number in record.

Ye Xiao definitely wanted to know all the numbers, in record or off record!

He wanted the truth of the sin!

In the capital, it was the biggest brothel. However, in the record, it had only dozens of girls...

"Just say it. Tell me all you know and I will give you a quick death." Ye Xiao kindly spoke, "You should know there are so many ways to die. Sometimes, when one wants to die, he just can't. In my hands, it is not a rare thing that a man begs to die but he never gets what he wants."

While he was speaking, he made some slight moves. That was really small moves. He just made some strange finger gestures and that was all.

The men in black all turned gloomy. Their faces changed!

The small moves Ye Xiao made were weird, but the men in black happened to know them. That was a way to torture people that was famous in Land of Han-Yang, the martial art Death or Life Hand!

Whoever was hit by that would end up rather miserable. It was even more terrible than [Bone Twisting Hand](#). In fact, these two skills were not even in the same league.

The Death or Life Hand could make the victim beg for death. It was the most brutal way to torture people in the world.

Ye Xiao finished making the gestures. He kept moving his fingers

though, trying to make some sounds. He blandly spoke, "You should better just tell me. I usually don't have much patience, especially now. I promise you that you will never get a second chance today."

"The capacity... of the Voluptuous Flower Building in the capital..." The leader of the men was gloomy. He faltered and then gritted his teeth, "The output is about... twenty thousand girls in a year..."

"Twenty thousand girls in a year!"

Song Jue exclaimed!

Second Prince truly was greedy bastard!

It was only the number of the Voluptuous Flower Building in the capital.

If all the branches in the kingdom were counted in, it should be a rather horrible number.

It was a number that showed the entirety of that place. That meant twenty thousand girls got in the brothel and twenty thousand girls left every year.

Ye Xiao took in a deep breath and closed his eyes. He said, "It is such a huge number. What happens to those who ran out of value to the business?"

"The lucky ones will be sold to some small brothels. They can survive..." The man in black lowered his head. His voice was getting lower and lower.

"What about the unlucky ones?" Bing-Er asked with fury.

Bing-Er made a guess, but she didn't want to believe it. She was hoping that she could get a different answer from the man in black!

Nobody noticed that Bing-Er's face was totally cold and her eyes were filled with darkness.

"The ones with bad luck... unluckily... will be killed... Their bodies will be destroyed. Nothing will be left..." the man in black spoke. His eyes were filled with gloom.

"So you do the after works?" Ye Xiao asked.

He sounded peacefully.

However, everybody knew that a horrible flame of anger was hidden under his peaceful voice. It would burst and explode at any second!

Ye Xiao had never thought of this.

In the peaceful and wealthy Chen-Xing City, a place that seemed to be full of happiness and leisure, there was actually such a brutal, lunatic, and painful sin!

The thing he couldn't believe the most was that... the hand of such a sin was from the royal house!

The second son of the king!

One of the rightful inheritors!

That was ridiculous!

Such a man was fighting... for that throne, which meant an extreme power in the kingdom!

Who knew what would happen to the world if such a man got on the throne!

Full of miseries? Pain in people's lives? Death all over the kingdom?

It might be much more than that!

[No wonder the Second Prince is so confident. Nobody understands why he is so confident! The Crown Prince is decided, yet the Second Prince still didn't give up.]

[It turns out he has an ace card!]

None of the men in black dared to answer Ye Xiao. They all had cold sweats on their backs.

Surely, not only they were working for that prince. It was such a big organization. He should have a great number of people to use.

"You don't want to answer me? Fine. Another question. Who is his alliance?" Ye Xiao lightly asked, "This is too big a plan for just a prince. He doesn't have enough capability to run such a business without being found out!"

"There are a few people... They are..." The man in black gave a few names of some officials. "I... I only know these names. There must be some more. I have no idea... Hmm. Wang Zhong is the most trusted man to Second Prince. He must know much more!"

"Hmm. There seems to be a mysterious figure on Second Prince's side. He is a grandmaster level cultivator..."

Ye Xiao nodded.

He looked up to the sky and closed his eyes.

Killing intent burst in his chest. He couldn't suppress it anymore!

Bone Twisting Hand. It should be a special martial art that is particularly used in torturing people. It will be mentioned in the

chapters after this.

Chapter 531: Raging Killing Qi

Unlike now, there was never a moment in his two lives that he would be more covetous and impatient... to kill someone!

The Second Prince!

That currish animal covered by human skin!

He deserved to die!

He must die!

[I am going to give him a miserable and extremely painful death. If not, how does it comfort those girls that died because of him!]

"Bing-Er, do you have a decision now? Or do you need to consider it a few more minutes?" Ye Xiao asked blandly. In his voice, there was extreme coldness.

He had made up his mind that even if Bing-Er was too softhearted to kill these men, he wouldn't let them live!

These men in black must die!

The darkness in Bing-Er's eyes faded away. Her eyes became bright and clear again. Her pretty face was a bit green and she said, "Master, such lunatic murderers deserve only one thing. Death!"

"Not only these five though. I want... all those who participated in this thing to die! They all deserve to die!"

Bing-Er spoke furiously.

As she spoke those words, Song Jue and Ye Xiao turned around and looked at her in surprise.

To be honest, to hear the word 'death' from Bing-Er was more surprising than her sparing them. They had never thought that Bing-Er would be so fierce!

"Bing-Er, it is easy to kill the five men here. But you have to know that if we kill all the men involved, there will be a huge number of death!"

Ye Xiao spoke in peace, "It should be at least a hundred thousand!"

Bing-Er gritted her teeth and said, "So what? Whoever participated have long lost their humanity. They are simply animals in human skins walking in the world. One hundred thousand, one million, ten million, as long as I am capable, I will kill them all!"

"Spare no one!"

"Otherwise, how to comfort the souls of those who died in pain!"

She was decisive and resolute!

A special qi of killing that only belonged to Bing-Er was aroused at the moment!

No women wouldn't want to kill all the men that bullied girls like that!

They should all get slaughtered! No mercy!

Ye Xiao slowly took a breath out and slowly spoke, "Since Bing-Er wishes so, I shall make my promise. I will never spare any of the men who participated in this evilness. No matter who they are, where they come, what stands behind them, from Second Prince to all the procuress and guards in the brothels in the kingdom... I will kill them all. No mercy!"

"Besides, all those are connected to Voluptuous Flower Building... I will kill them all too! No exception!"

Ye Xiao sounded rather solemn.

"The Voluptuous Flower Building has been running in the world for eight years... Every year, there are about twenty thousand girls that die in the capital. In the entire kingdom... It should be at least a hundred thousand! Eight years, that means at least eighty thousand girls died!"

Eighty thousand souls!

What a horrible number. Beside, those were all young girls in their perfect age!

Ye Xiao took in a deep breath. "If I don't kill all those who are involved... How do I feel relieved?"

"Master..." Bing-Er turned her head and stared at him. "Bing-Er doesn't like blood and killings. But... These people. They deserve to die. I will do it myself!"

Ye Xiao blandly said, "Good. Let's start it tonight! The earlier we start it, the less girls will be murdered!"

On his face, there was sharp killing intent. He gently said, "Start it now!"

His hands suddenly lit up with sharp lights.

A stream of cold qi burst out. It swayed over and five heads fell to the floor at the same time!

The five men in black didn't even have time to exclaim before their heads got chopped off by Ye Xiao!

He didn't break his words. He didn't torture them. He gave them

a quick death. One sword, five heads off. Five died!

The eight Sky Origin Stage cultivators who were sent over by Second Prince all died!

However, it was just the beginning of a massacre!

"Let's go!" Ye Xiao truly didn't want to wait any longer.

He couldn't endure that there was actually such an organization in the world that was run by a prince and did coldblooded harm to girls. Ye Xiao's couldn't tolerate it anymore!

Since he was capable to do something, he decided to do it directly!

Song Jue wanted to catch up with Ye Xiao, but he stopped and was stunned!

Something stunned such a master level cultivator. That must be something big. In fact, it wasn't that magical though!

Song Jue saw the extreme cold qi flowing around Ye Xiao's body!

That cold qi...

Song Jue felt so familiar with it...

Why so?

It reminded Song Jue the mysterious man who cured him!

That man saved his life but never showed himself! His savior!

"Xiao Xiao!" Song Jue came up with a ridiculous thought. At least, he believed it was ridiculous. He asked, "Could it be... The man who treated my wounds for me... is never some hidden super cultivator... Was it... you?"

Ye Xiao was stunned. He realized that he accidentally showed the extreme cold qi because he was too angry. He didn't think it necessary to hid it from Song Jue anymore. He smiled. "Uncle Song, a big issue is in front of us. Why focus on such a small thing? Come on. Let's get on it! Let's go and pay a visit to this unique prince in the world. He must be a historic figure in the world, very likely the unique figure both in the past and the future."

As he spoke, he held Bing-Er's hand and flew up to the sky.

In the night sky, Bing-Er's white clothes was floating. Within seconds, they had gone far.

"What do you mean little thing? That concerns my life and my capability! What an important thing to me. Why do you take it as an inconsequential thing?" Song Jue was a bit upset. He rubbed his head and said, "Am I a small figure so my things are

inconsequential..."

Song Jue was a bit upset, but he knew it wasn't a good time to stick on such a thing now.

Ye Xiao had gone far with Bing-Er. Song Jue was afraid they would get in any troubles. He knew Ye Xiao was capable enough to save themselves, but as Bing-Er was there, there might be some accident.

He hid the gloom in his heart and jumped up, trying to catch up with them.

Chapter 532: In Prince's Palace

[When we come back, I am so going to get it done with you! You want to cure me, fine! Why do you have to knock me out every time! Am I such a good target for you...]

Song Jue was thinking.

[Hmmm... Since when did the kid become so good in cultivation?] He couldn't think it through, [He was just in Human Origin Stage a few months ago. He got a big progress a few days ago, but that boosted him to Earth Origin Stage only... But now he killed Sky Origin Stage cultivators so easily. What level is he right now... Isn't he more like a monster than Bing-Er...]

[Could it be... monsters always stay together?]

He was full of confusion. His head was filled with muss. He couldn't understand it, and he couldn't believe it either.

In the sky, wild wind started.

Dark clouds were gathering. The moon was fully covered!

It seemed even the moon didn't want to see the bloodshed that was about to happen.

[Do whatever you want.]

[I won't see anything...]

As dark clouds covered its eyes, it wouldn't judge the mortal world!

...

In Second Prince's Place.

The prince was sitting in a chair, waiting for his men to take back the beauty.

In front of him, there was a big Chinese chessboard. An old man with white beard was playing the Chinese chess with him. That old man was wearing light colored clothes. Both his hair and beard were white, but he still looked strong and tough. He looked a little like a sage.

However, while his eyes rolled, there was an extremely dirty look in the eyes. That ruined his good image.

The dirtiness was difficult to cover no matter what he did. It was deep inside his bones.

"Master, money from south and north has arrived in the capital today." The prince put a chess piece on the board casually, which made a loud sound. "However... money from the east has been

robbed. It is said that people of House of the Chaotic Storms did it."

The old man stared at the chessboard. He frowned and said, "Is it a solid information?"

The prince nodded. "Should be. They are at least involved."

The old man took in a deep breath and said, "If so, we may have to stop the business in the east for some time. Or maybe we can send somebody to do some destructions on ourselves... It will cover us up at some point. The House of the Chaotic Storms is not ordinary force. We must not mess with them. We wouldn't, we don't and we won't."

The prince nodded. "I thought so too."

The old man put a chess piece on the board and said, "If you think so too, that will be great. You have to understand, your honor. In this world, even your father cannot threaten us. However, the House of the Chaotic Storm is somebody we can never afford messing with!"

Second Prince nodded. "For eight years, we went so smoothly in this business. The recent one year, the House of the Chaotic Storms stopped us many times. I guess we are going to get through a tough time financially."

The old man raised up his head slowly. His dirty eyes lit up. "That is something we cannot solve... the House of the Chaotic

Storms is so powerful. It is riding upon the entire Land of Han-Yang in all history. The owner, Master Bai, never shows himself. It is the two ladies, Wan of the Clouds and Xiu of the Heavens who take charge of it... Think about it... If these two ladies know what we do... What will happen?"

The prince's face changed for a while. He then forcibly smiled. "What should I fear for? Nothing, as long as I have you on my side, Master!"

"B*llshit!" The old man didn't like it. "In your eyes, I may be one of the top cultivators in the world. I won't deny it, because I am. However, in some people's eyes, I am no more valuable than a fart! If the House of the Chaotic Storms gets on to us, I will run the hell away as fast as I can! Do not have fluke mind!"

"Remember one thing, we stay as low profile as we can now. When the House of the Chaotic Storms stops making chaotic storms, we go on with it. If our business is revealed to the public, we are doomed." The old man humphed.

Second Prince said, "Yes. That is the only way."

The old man stopped and then he said, "Hmm. By the way, you can stop everything, but never stop giving me blood of virgins. That you must serve me!"

Second Prince smiled. "Certainly. I will never delay your cultivation progress."

In his mind, he was cursing. [Fxck you. I talked so much to tell you that it is so difficult to get that bloody thing for you! Now you understand every word I said, yet you still asked for blood of virgins?]

[Where the fxck do I find such a thing for you? It is a time of war now!]

Thinking about virgins, it reminded him the prettiest and purest girl that he met in his life, for whom he had sent his men to capture. He suddenly felt hot down his body. The private part of him rose up quickly.

He was looking forward to it. He shouted, "Is Zhou Da back with his men?"

Somebody answered him from outside the door, "Not yet. Don't worry, your honor. The eight of them went on the job together. It never failed when they strike together. It is just a General's House. It won't be difficult."

Second Prince nodded.

The old man didn't get the answer he wanted. He wouldn't let it go. He asked again, "Are you sure that you can give me one hundred virgins by the middle of this month?"

Second Prince sighed in his mind.

[Chen-Xing City is in a mess right now. At this moment, the only thing you care is the one hundred fxcking virgins that you want. What the fxck...]

However, he knew so well that his life had been bonded to this devil long ago. He couldn't leave it anymore. If he didn't do as that old man said, or the old man got angry with him, he would lose everything he had now!

"Absolutely! No problem!" Second Prince sincerely spoke, "It will be delayed no more than two days! It won't take the third day after the tenth this month. Before that, I will give you all the virgins you want."

Chapter 533: Raging Over

The old man nodded with satisfaction, "Good, then it won't stop my progress!"

The Second Prince held a chess piece in his hand, thinking. He watched the chessboard and hesitated on where to put it.

He met this old man eight years earlier. When the old man knew that he was a prince, he started to give the prince promises to allure him.

‘I can help you get on the throne.’

‘I can teach you mysterious martial art.

‘I can extend your life.’

‘I can...’

‘I can give you all you want, and you just need to help me back!’

Who wouldn't want that throne? He was a prince.

Besides, he could get many other things other than the throne!

After Second Prince showed the old man his power, they made

the deal. Even when they made the deal, he didn't know what the old man wanted him to do!

What Second Prince did after that was the plan of Voluptuous Flower Building. He knew from the beginning how conscienceless and brutal the thing he was going to do.

However, when lots of money kept coming to him, and more and more people came to support him, not to mention he became capable to fight against his big brother...

He didn't have the choice to retreat.

He was full of ambition.

[Successful man doesn't stick at trifles.] He always comforted himself. [I will only need to sacrifice a few hundreds of thousand girls and I will get to my great achievement! The land belongs to the winner. All people belongs to the king. The kingdom will be mine in the future. The winner writes history. Who will care about such trifles!]

[There are people dying in the war!]

[People die for the new king!]

It was so difficult to snatch the crown from the Crown Prince.

However, with the old man's support, everything was going to a good path.

[As long as I can get on the throne, every sacrifice is worth it!]

He first felt guilty, but then felt happy, and then he felt satisfied and relieved, at last lunatic and shameless...

That was only in one and a half year!

When he was over it, he always plausibly talked, "There is no women in the world who can keep their virginity after all! Since it will be broken someday anyway, why does it matter who breaks it? Why not me? Absolutely me! I am a prince! I am noble!"

"I am the future king! I take their virginity, it is a blessing to them! Their sacrifice will support a king's rise. They should smile even in hell!"

He never felt guilty anymore. He was enjoying it, with the lunatic theory he made up.

"They are my people after all. They are no more virgins, but they still can create values for their owner!"

Then the girls became prostitute. They were sold and killed after that...

They died and brought Second Prince money to buy horses and weapons.

Now he was sitting in front of the chessboard, yet his mind wasn't here anymore.

The girl in House of Ye was the most beautiful girl he had ever seen!

[I am going to enjoy her so much. She is not the same as other women. Maybe I should keep her in my room?]

[I can keep her for a few years. When she becomes not that pretty, I can sell her... If she stays the same, and always listen to me, she will be a good choice for a concubine.]

[That must be a huge bliss for such a poor girl...]

He was having a wonderful plan on it.

The old man saw the prince holding the chess piece. He blandly said, "I guess the target, the girl tonight, you like her so much!"

The prince smiled. He nodded cautiously, "Yes. I like this girl very much."

The old man asked slowly, "Is she a virgin?"

Second Prince frowned.

[I told him I like her very much!]

[I showed my attitude. Why does he have to ask me this question? Isn't he ruining my pleasure!]

"She should be!" He said, "I like her very much. This girl, master, why don't you just leave her to me."

He decided to be frank on this.

The old man laughed. "Since you like her so much, I won't take it. I am curious though, how beautiful should she be that makes you so attracted? You even took the risk of offending an important official for her!"

Second Prince smiled. It looked randy in his eyes. He said, "It is going to be a memorable night. The martial art you taught me that requires sexual intercourse, I finally found this girl that I can practice on."

The old man laughed. "Oh? Is she really that talented? If that's true, you are such a lucky man. I am aroused too only by listening to you."

While the two shameless pricks were having the dirty talk, a voice blandly sounded, "I am not so sure about it, whether you are lucky or not. Tonight, it truly is a memorable night... However, it

is also a night that you two are going to die. I am ten thousand percent sure about it!"

As the voice sounded, countless moans sounded around them.

The old man was frightened. He turned around and said, "Who is it?"

- Boom! -

A big sound.

The gate of the hall exploded into ashes!

A young man in cyan clothes and a girl in white showed up there!

The young man had his hands on the back. He looked casual and indifferent. The girl was holding a snow-white long sword. The sword was running with cold qi, glowing with cold colors. It looked vicious.

Second Prince stood up and surprisedly said, "Ye Xiao? How did you?"

The old man seemed not to hear the prince's exclamation. He stared at Bing-Er's face from the very beginning.

He was surprised and touched. He suddenly laughed. "There is actually such an exquisite beautiful woman! Good! A beauty comes to me herself! I will have to take her! Hahaha..."

...

Chapter 534: Begin the Bloodshed

"Old bastard! Still dreaming with your last breath, huh! Tonight, you die."

The eyes of the young man in cyan clothes were filled with killing intent. "No. I won't let them die so fast. It is too good for them. Maybe the others can just die for their sins, but Bing-Er, I assure you though, that this old bastard and that prince are going to beg for death. For the rest of their lives, they will live in endless pain, and they will be confessing about whatever they have done in the extreme pain!"

It was Ye Xiao and Bing-Er, as expected.

Ye Xiao didn't want to cover his true identity this time!

He wanted to do it under the light. He wanted everybody to know that he wiped out the palace of Second Prince. Only so could he vent the massive anger in his heart!

When Ye Xiao decided to do it without cover, the Second Prince's Place was doomed to collapse!

Second Prince was like a mystery, but he was vividly a man with a mouth full of bad luck!

He said 'it is going to be a memorable night'. And it was indeed!

Ye Xiao would never let anybody leak the information about his true identity tonight!

Everyone in Second Prince's Palace would have to be slaughtered!

Moaning filled the entire palace.

A lot of assassins in black stood on the walls of Second Prince's Palace.

They were watching every corner of the palace. Whoever tried to escape would get killed instantly!

Somebody tried to lit up a signal firework. There were many people of different forces in Chen-Xing City, as it was not long after the crisis in capital. As long as their men saw the signal, they would come to save the palace. However, when he just took out the firework, he was shot by an arrow to death before he could light it up.

There were some sparrow hawks trying to fly away. They were smashed by an invisible power into masses of meat, falling down from the sky.

At the gate, Song Jue stood there alone, holding a long sword that felt like a weapon of death. He didn't stop swaying it. Wherever the sword went, it flashed in white light. Every strike of him made a wave of blade mountain.

From the gate, wherever Song Jue passed, there were departed dead bodies left behind. The body parts were all on the two sides. The martial art he was using was the sword art that he used when he was in Qing-Yun Realm!

It was not a strong and fierce sword art, and it wasn't special either. However, it was the most vicious sword art!

Whoever was cut would never keep their body fully intact. No exceptions!

In other three different directions outside the palace.

Three men in black were like three murderous gods on three directions. Their swords rolled and rolled like an avalanche. After the splendid sword lights, blood waves came after. Wherever their sword light went, men fell and death bodies covered the place!

In the Second Prince's Place, there had been a big loss during the big crisis of the Kingdom of Chen earlier. However, it most damaged the force of the noble clans. The origin force of the Second Prince wasn't quite affected. Hundreds of guards were defending the palace at the moment, and there were even a certain amount of Royal Guards.

However, to these three murderous gods, they were like criminals awaiting for execution. Even though they were the strongest force in the Kingdom of Chen, they couldn't defend themselves at all. As the sword lights got to them, the formation of those guards was destroyed.

East, south, north and west, four slaughter gods got over together from four directions. The force they exhibited was something the Second Prince's Palace could never withstand!

The guards in the palace were destroyed as soon as they were seen. Some of them survived in the first round fight, only by then did they realize how dangerous it was!

Those men were apparently coming to wipe out the entire Second Prince's Palace.

The two great sects had been to this palace fiercely before, but they were here for the people in the three noble clans. They killed many of the men of the clans, but not many men of the palace were wounded.

The great sects knew they needed to show some kindness to the royal house after all.

However, the powerful cultivators in the martial world had shocked the guards. At the moment, more cultivators got over to them. This time, they were much more powerful!

The guards were all frightened. They couldn't hold on to the fight anymore. That was one of the reasons why the four assassins could kill the guards instantly. If the guards were all brave and fearless, even though Song Jue was in his prime status, he would have to spend quite a long time to deal with them!

However, because the guards had experienced the bloodshed of the superior cultivators in the martial world, they knew the side with more men never had any advantage. They realized that, this time, their enemies were determined to kill, so they started to find ways to flee.

Because of that, the four assassins were chasing after over two thousand guards to kill. What a weird picture. The guards were running out of their own place. Some of them even thought about breaking out there. What a joke!

Such a ridiculous joke!

However, such a joke was happening right there.

Many of them knew they didn't have a chance. They rushed to the wall around the palace, trying to escape. However, they just jumped over the wall, and they fell back down, screaming. Each of them were injured with a big blood hole on the chest as their blood splashed.

When the guards fell down from the wall, some guys in black jumped down after them. They didn't speak a word, but instead just swayed the long sword in their hands to chop the guards' heads.

No matter the guards were wounded or already dead... they just kept chopping their heads off!

They didn't give the guards pretending to be dead a chance at all!

"If you want to make sure somebody is dead, just chop off his head. That is the only way to guarantee it."

That was Ye Xiao's words before the mission started. It was such an axiom for all assassins.

"No matter how strong they are, they are dead when their heads are off. If somebody can survive without a head on his shoulders. Guys, let's spare his miserable life."

Ye Xiao's words had made many assassins laugh out loud.

...

Chapter 535: Rebellion? So What!

‘If somebody can survive without a head on his shoulders. Guys, let’s spare his miserable life.’

What... What does that mean?

However, the assassins in black under Ye Xiao’s lead were strictly observing this order!

When they chopped off the heads, they piled the bodies together in a place and piled the heads together in another place.

They never let the heads and the bodies touch. What if the head went back to the body? Should they really spare them?

That was not a good joke. In fact, they just wanted to make it easy for counting.

Dead bodies were like bags being piled up in one place after another. The heads were thrown up in the sky like watermelons to the same place to be counted!

Gradually, there was a mountain of heads beside the man who did the counting work. He stood in front of the mountain of heads then kicked the heads that were rolling away. Heads were round. Some of them just kept dropping away.

It looked exactly like someone was selling watermelon on the street.

However, it was not a watermelon mountain, it was a bloody mountain of heads!

The four overwhelming assassins were as expected Song Jue, Ning Biluo, Liu Changjun and Zhao Pingtian!

The three of them were here for Ye Xiao. That was reasonable.

However, it was not a reasonable thing for others that the three assassins worked together. The three of them together made a horrible killing spree!

In the Land of Han-Yang, when they fought together, they could damage anything in the world seriously, not to mention just a prince's palace!

Especially when they saw Song Jue kill like that, Ning Biluo and Zhao Pingtian didn't want to feel left behind by Song Jue.

Was there anybody in the world that could be better at killing than the two of them?

They had to accept it if it was about the cultivation capabilities. However, if it referred to the skill of assassination, they would never admit defeat!

They could never lose their fames as king!

That made them fight like hungry tigers. They kept showing their best skills and killed so fast. They wanted to compete with Steward Song and defeat him!

There were many guards in this palace. However, the strongest one was the leader, who was only level 1 of Sky Origin Stage. Not many of the others had reached Earth Origin Stage. They could never have a chance to defend the four killers!

The leader was unlucky. He didn't have time to show what he got yet. When he was seen, his head was cut off in an instant by Zhao Pingtian!

In fact, even if he had time to really fight against Zhao Pingtian, he would die in the same way!

As the killing went on, the palace was getting more and more full of blood. In the air, a grey mass of power was forming up and moving to the gate.

That was where Ye Xiao stood.

The power disappeared when it got to the back of Ye Xiao.

Ye Xiao didn't see it.

Of course, he didn't see the power, because he didn't operate the Yin Yang Eyes.

In the Boundless Space, Brother Egg was spinning rapidly... The grey mass of power was the soul energy from the dead men. Brother Egg was silently absorbing it thoroughly!

No even a bit went out!

Those men died and even their souls were absorbed!

Ye Xiao wanted those men to be doomed and never get any chance to be reborn!

Brother Egg didn't think much. It just wanted that power, and it just did what Ye Xiao wanted!

Those men died and their souls were absorbed with it!

In the main hall.

The old man in white beard sat still with half closed his eyes. He looked at Ye Xiao, thinking, ignoring all sounds that came from outside. "So you are Ye Xiao? Ye Nantian's son?"

Ye Xiao ignored Second Prince, who was staring at him fiercely. He answered to the old man, "I am Ye Xiao, your daddy, old

bastard. Tell me your name. Let me see if it is good enough for me to kill you myself!"

The old man half closed his eyes and coldly said, "How bold you little prick! Even your father Ye Nantian didn't dare to talk to me like that. You stupid little sh*t. How dare you talk like this to me. You really do not know how cruel the world is!"

Second Prince finally realized something. He heard the sounds of killing outside and the mournings of his men. His face turned pale. "Ye Xiao! How dare you! You broke into the Prince's Palace in the midnight with weapons. You disgraced the royal power and you are trying to murder a prince. Are you rebelling now?"

He was not a complete garbage after all. He knew why Ye Xiao was here and he knew he couldn't stop this fight anymore. He still wanted to seize a higher position. As he talked, he tried to put the accusation on Ye Xiao so that Ye Xiao might hesitate. He was a prince after all. He thought that Ye Xiao wouldn't really kill a prince. As long as he could survive, he had the chance to revenge!

Ye Xiao looked at him coldly and said, "I just want to kill a bastard. Is it a rebellion now? Let's say I am rebelling now, so what? What are you going to do?"

He then shouted, "Now shut the fxck up you scum!"

That was cold and full of killing qi!

Second Prince was suddenly pushed by the overwhelming qi. His face turned pale and his lips were trembling. He didn't know what he could say now! He felt weak on his legs and nearly fell on the floor. He tried so hard to hold it up, but he was so embarrassed.

Bing-Er's cold eyes were full of disdain and hatred. He stared at Second Prince and said, "So you are the man who tried to ruin my happy life?"

For Bing-Er, that was the most important thing for her!

[I never had happiness, but now I have found the happy life I longed for. How dare you jump out and try to destroy it!]

[It is strictly forbidden. I won't allow it and I won't forgive it!]

She looked at Second Prince like a female leopard waiting to eat somebody. She wished she could swallow him and chew him!

She was extremely fierce and brutal at the moment!

...

Chapter 536: Mister Hundred Flowers

Bing-Er was extremely furious at the moment, yet her face was still so beautiful. The extreme beauty didn't change because of her anger. Instead, it made her look more attractive!

Second Prince stared at her. The white beard old man looked even more randy in his eyes!

They looked at Bing-Er like they were going to swallow her.

- Clang! -

A long sword in scabbard showed up in Ye Xiao's hand. He drew the sword out fast and loud.

The sword clashed the scabbard when it was drawn out. It made a thunderous noise that shocked the world!

Only half of the sword was out of the scabbard, yet the momentum was reaching the clouds!

"Kill!"

Ye Xiao's eyes looked solid like his sword.

"Wait!"

The old man stared at Ye Xiao with a strange look in his eyes. "Kiddo, don't you want to know who I am before you start? If the fight begins, nothing can turn it around. Don't you want to enjoy your life?"

The old guy was a vile person. He was excellent in martial art, and he had been beyond the limitation of the Land of Han-Yang already. He could see that Ye Xiao was good, but still far weaker than him. As he knew, there was no real powerful man in House of Ye.

He was surprised about what Ye Xiao did, but he always thought that there should be one or two superior cultivators in the House of Ye. Ye Nantian was known as a perfect father. He loved his son so much, so it was reasonable that he would keep one or two good men around Ye Xiao. The killings outside the room was reasonable too. The guards in Second Prince's Palace were not so good after all. The Blood Guards of House of Ye coming all together could surely slaughter their way in. That wasn't so surprising.

Ye Xiao was just there. The old man was confident that he could capture Ye Xiao by one move. That was why he talked to Ye Xiao like he was having a chitchat. He wanted to change Ye Xiao's mind, because, after all, it was at a special time. If Ye Xiao could cooperate with Second Prince, things would turn up much better for him.

However, nobody wanted to mess with Ye Nantian.

At the moment, a man in black jumped into the room. Sword light flashed, and six of the eight guards around Second Prince were cut in the throats. Blood splashed out as six heads fell off and hit the floor at the same time. They were rolling on the floor.

The man in black said, "I know who you are. It turns out the Mister Hundred Flowers, who has disappeared for over twenty years is here! Hua Liushui, you think too high of yourself. Do you really think there is nobody in the world who can recognize you? Ignorant prick!"

That was the World's No. 1 Assassin, Ning Biluo, speaking.

It hadn't been long since Ning Biluo and the other three slaughtered their way here, yet they had killed most of the guards. The palace was doomed for sure. Ning Biluo made sure the other three controlled the whole situation and got in the room because he worried about Ye Xiao!

The old man was surprised, "Who are you? Sharp eyes indeed. You actually know me!"

He couldn't believe there was actually someone who could recognize him!

Mister Hundred Flowers had been ruling the martial world because he had so many strange martial arts. He did quite a lot evil things and nobody could take him down.

The most incredibly vile thing and degrading thing was that he raped women. He usually raped and killed. He was totally mad.

He was cultivating some rare and special martial art that he needed to have sex with women to make a progress.

One marvelous thing of this martial art was that no matter how badly he was wounded, he would recover fully as long as there was a woman sleeping with him! However, the women he had sex with would end up dead in a horrible way.

That strange and contemptible thing he did finally arouse the anger of the public.

At the end, over thirty superior cultivators from different sects fought together to hunt him.

Even so, Mister Hundred Flowers killed five of them and then fled away. Nobody knew where he went.

Some people said that he was dead, and the rest of the over thirty cultivators testified that he was seriously wounded and couldn't do bad things anymore!

Mister Hundred Flowers was badly injured indeed. He was cut on the belly, and his dantian was nearly cut!

Because of that injury, he had been hiding for over a decade. He was trying to heal himself. He hadn't return to his peak status even

now.

However, after resting for so many years, and with the help of Second Prince, he had raped so many girls, he was basically healed.

The reason why Second Prince would run a brothel was because of this old prick.

In fact, he had changed his entire look before he showed himself. He even made himself a white bearded old man that looked like a sage. He was completely like a different person now. He always stayed hidden in Second Prince's Palace and didn't show up.

When the two great sects attacked the palace, the old prick didn't show up at all. Among those girls whose cultivation he messed with, there were a few from the great sects. He didn't want to be recognized at all!

He had gotten away once, yet there came another. Somebody called his name now. What a strange thing!

Ning Biluo humphed, "Hua Liushui, it turns out you have forgotten... Don't you remember who gave you that wound on your belly?"

Mister Hundred Flower was stunned. His heart was suddenly filled with hatred. He raged up, "Ning Biluo! It is you! You are here!"

He had been fearless in the world once. All the girls that he wanted would eventually die in his hands. Among those girls, there were a few from the people Ning Biluo was responsible to take care of. They died in the perfect age.

Many major forces in the world had gathered around to hunt him down. They didn't plan to let Ning Biluo join them at the beginning; he was an assassin after all. However, Ning Biluo asked to fight among them. He even tried to sacrifice himself to kill Hua Liushui. At the end, he made a sword move and damaged Hua Liushui badly. If Ning Biluo wasn't there that day, nobody knew what it would lead to!

Ning Biluo had always been holding the grudge that he failed to kill Hua Liushui by that sword attack.

...

Chapter 537: Killing People like Cutting Weeds

Ning Biluo humphed, "How did that sword strike taste? Was it good? If not, let me give you two more until you are satisfied!"

Foes met, anger aroused. Hua Liushui shouted and then moved. Suddenly, he became a mass of whirling wind that rapidly moved to Ning Biluo. "Twenty years ago, you cut me with a sneak attack. You did it because you had lots of people on your side. You are now alone standing here. You won't be blessed twice! I wonder how you could survive against me this time!"

His shouts thundered in the room.

Hua Liushui's lightning attacks hit Ning Biluo like rainstorm.

Ning Biluo humped and then raised his sword to defend. After only seconds, they were turning into two mass of splendid sword lights. They crashed and crashed in the air as loud cracking noise was resounding!

- Puff! -

The floor screen fell down. A team of men with solemn faces dressed in black rushed in. They all looked cold. There was no emotion in their eyes. As they entered this place, the room was filled with dense killing qi!

There were twelve men in the team!

They were all vigorous. Apparently, they were all top class cultivators!

These were exactly cultivators that Hua Liushui raised and trained during the years he was hiding. They were the key force of the Second Prince's Palace, the most powerful one!

In fact, since Ye Xiao entered this place, he felt some strong breath hiding around. That was why he hadn't made a further move for so long. Now that Ning Biluo made his attack and got Hua Liushui in the fight, these men finally showed up!

As they showed up, things seemed to turn worse on Ye Xiao's side. However, Ye Xiao took a breath with relief.

He never feared visible enemies.

The most terrifying enemies were those hidden in the dark!

"Bing-Er, go get the Second Prince! He is the man who wants to ruin your happy life! But don't kill him yet. We need to get some information from him. The others... Just let me handle them..." Ye Xiao blandly smiled.

Bing-Er nodded. She didn't hesitate. She just swayed her sword and then her slim body already turned into a snow white whirlwind.

Lots of cold qi suddenly spread out, covering people's sight.

"Stop her!" Second Prince was frightened. He gave the order and then quickly stepped back, panicking.

The twelve guys expressionlessly stepped forward. They were trying to stop Bing-Er.

Ye Xiao humphed and then rapidly rushed over to them like an arrow shooting out.

In the air, the thundering noise of his sword resounded again!

His long sword finally came out!

As the sword showed up, it turned into a lightning, striking to the twelve men!

[He wants to attack us with one strike?]

The twelve men showed sneer and disdain in their eyes at the same time.

They were specially trained by Hua Liushui while he was hiding and curing himself. He brought them with him in case he needed help when he returned to the martial world. These men together had horrible strength. They were all good both mentally and

physically.

They immediately realized that Ye Xiao was not an ordinary man. He might win the fight if he was fighting ten of them, however, he was fighting the twelve of them. That was simply an egg hitting on rocks!

"Ignorant!" They humphed. Their swords sounded at the same time. The twelve swords came out at the same time but only made one sound.

While Ye Xiao was getting closer with the lightning sword, they made a huge mass of blue glow!

They made the sword strike together. They were determined to defeat Ye Xiao at one strike!

[How disgraceful if we cannot do it!]

Ye Xiao's eyes flashed with a strange light as a weird smile showed up on his mouth. The long sword suddenly left his hand. His body was still in the air, but the long sword was ahead of him, flying ahead.

It flew into the crowd like a shooting star.

The twelve men hadn't thought that he would actually throw away his weapon.

Things got unexpected to them now. As the sword parted from his hand, Ye Xiao became a bit slower. The sword was boosting out. Because of that, the time when the sword hit on them was unpredictable! It was not what they thought it would be!

The men had a quick reaction though. They quickly raised their swords at the same time.

- Clang! -

One of their swords hit the flying long sword and made a harsh sound. It crashed and made a sparkle.

The man among them who held the sword felt that something was wrong. He felt that the flying sword was far less powerful than it looked like.

In other words, this flying sword was just a decoy. There must be a more powerful attack after it.

When he was about to warn the others, it happened. When they were all focusing on the flying sword, Ye Xiao suddenly twisted himself in the air strangely!

- Shoot, shoot, shoot... -

Thirty-six needles flew out from different parts of his body in an

extremely weird way.

At the same time, twelve knives flew out along the needles!

At that moment, Ye Xiao's hand had made hundreds of gestures and he became like a phantom.

Apparently, he didn't plan to let the fight last long!

He just wanted to end the fight as soon as possible!

One against twelve, so what? Why couldn't he end the fight against them all by himself!

- Pah pah pah... -

Three men among the twelve swayed their swords so fast. Over a dozen needles were hit away, as well as several knives. One of the knives flew over the Second Prince and grazed his cheek. The cold qi in it felt like hell. He exclaimed and nearly peed in his pants!

However, some strange sounds came out...

Seven of the twelve men were shocked and they couldn't believe what they saw.

Three of these seven were holding their necks while the other

four were holding their hearts. They fell back and hit the floor like rotten woods.

Before their bodies touched the floor, a mass of sword lights flashed!

- Puff, puff, puff... -

Ye Xiao swayed his sword seven times like he was using a huge broadsword. The shadows of the sword still lingered in the air as seven heads were cut off by Ye Xiao in an instant!

Blood immediately covered the floor!

The twelve men were all brilliant cultivators. The weakest of them was level 2 of Sky Origin Stage, while the strongest one had reached level 6 of Sky Origin Stage!

However, when they were facing Ye Xiao, they didn't know that there were such an unbelievable and weird way to kill!

They never knew there were such inconceivable fighting methods!

...

Chapter 538: Quick Fight!

The needles and knives had been hit away, but they actually flew a circle around and flew back to the men again. It was like somebody was invisibly controlling them.

The round routed force made a credit!

The rest of the five men couldn't save their teammates. They kept swaying their swords and fought so hard to hit away the flying weapons. They were all gloomy on the faces and also fearful.

The reason why they were so scared... was that the dead men's bodies, which had been hit by the needles and knives, were all turning dark!

That was horrible. When a man died, his body should stop working. The blood should stop running in the veins. Even if they died after getting poisoned, the poison shouldn't spread away in the body. However, the seven dead bodies were turning darker and darker.

Apparently, the poison on the needles and knives were something really rare!

The five living men were all holding hatred and anger in the hearts!

[This young man is obviously not so weaker than us. He is even

more powerful than some of us. However, he actually uses hidden weapons and poison on us...]

[He just doesn't want to fight face to face!]

[How shameless!]

It felt like a grownup man fighting against a three years old kid, with the grownup man using a gun, while the kid was fighting with empty hands...

[It isn't about honor anymore. It is about sense of shame and how shameless he is...]

The five men were extremely furious. They even cursed him while they were busy hitting the flying weapons. Ye Xiao jumped up and grabbed the long sword that was falling down. - Clang! -

A bright tower formed as sword lights appeared in the sky!

It was spinning and making a vicious glow. Several streams of lights were produced...

It hit down on the heads of the five men!

That's right. It smashed!

It just smashed down!

He wasn't using a sword now. He made the sword light, sword breath and the power of it into mountains and hammers falling down from the sky!

Whoever was hit by a real hammer like that on the head would definitely become a meat pie with brains pouring out.

However, if someone got hit by this sword hammer, he would become a pile of minced meat!

The five men exclaimed at the same time.

They fought so hard to defend it. They all knew that they would instantly die if they got hit by this strike. They wouldn't even leave a complete body.

They would be even worse than the seven headless men!

Ye Xiao's eyes were only filled with viciousness.

The sword made a lap in the sky.

- Shoot, shoot, shoot... -

The flying needles and knives all turned around and flew fast to

Ning Biluo's fight.

Apparently, Ye Xiao had controlled the situation on his side, so he decided to help Ning Biluo.

He did more than that.

After the sword made a round, the long sword flew out and stabbed into one of the five men's chest. That man in black only felt cold in his chest. Ye Xiao let go of the sword, left it in the man's chest and made a powerful fist punch!

It hit on another man beside him on the chest!

After that, he stepped back a bit and reached out his right hand forward and dragged the sword out off that man's chest. There was blood coming out with it. The sword burst in glows again.

Endless sword breaths flew out immediately. The three men who were still alive hurriedly swayed their swords. That long sword flew off Ye Xiao's hand and shot out again!

It did a different thing this time!

- Puff! -

The sword flew out and cut a man's body. It pushed him hard on the wall!

At the same time, Ye Xiao strangely appeared around another man and kicked on his leg. - Crack! - The leg was not only broken, but it was actually kicked off his body and flew out in distance!

At this moment, Bing-Er's long sword had been pushed onto Second Prince's neck! Her master told her not to kill him, however, Bing-Er just wanted him to suffer. She wouldn't let this sick man feel easy.

She raised her small hand. - Pah, pah, pah, pah... - She slapped on the prince's face fast.

Bing-Er finally showed her fierce part while facing this monster who tried to ruin her life!

On Ye Xiao's side, he continually made strange strikes and made several kills. As he kicked that man on the leg, he seemed to be out of moves. It looked like he couldn't make any new attack and he even couldn't draw his foot back. The last man in black thought that it was a perfect chance. He wouldn't let it go. He gritted with his teeth and swayed his sword over. While he was so close to Ye Xiao, his sword emitted a big mass of blue light. It was about to stab a big hole in Ye Xiao's chest.

Ye Xiao couldn't turn around indeed. He couldn't make it. He still held his sword in his left hand, but he couldn't make it back to defend that attack. The last man in black thought that he was going to make it. He was so happy but then he found that Ye Xiao's empty right hand started to shine with a sword light.

An exquisite short sword appeared in his right hand. Within an instant, he hit the sword with blue light and made it go aside.

That slight difference completely changed the result!

- Shoot! -

That sword went through Ye Xiao's sleeve. The man in black had used all his power on that sword attack, and as it missed Ye Xiao, he was still rushing forward. Ye Xiao moved his body aside and used his arm to lock on the man's neck!

He pushed hard on it and then turned around powerfully!

- Crack! -

The eyeballs of the man in black popped out, and his neck was broken.

At the same time, the short sword in Ye Xiao's right hand became a rainbow, with some blood on it. It flew out and went through the man's heart whose leg was kicked off!

- Puff! -

The short sword went through it and didn't stop. It flew out of that man's back and stabbed deep into the door!

Chapter 539: Clean Sweep!

At this moment, Zhao Pingtian and Liu Changun had finished their battles outside. They rushed inside and joined them.

When they got in, the first thing they saw was a bunch of miserable dead bodies on the floor!

They happened to see how Ye Xiao killed the last man!

They witnessed such a perfect slaughter, causing the both of them to take in a cold breath.

Ye Xiao used his own life as a bait to trap and kill the last man in black. He killed one man with his arms while using the short sword to finish the other in the heart!

What a controlling force he had!

Since he had such power, he actually didn't need to put himself in risk. He just needed to fight a bit longer and he could easily kill the two of them!

He obviously knew it, but he just wanted to use something extreme. Apparently, he wanted to do it quick!

He didn't want to delay anymore!

On the other side, Ning Biluo was having a hard fight against Hua Liushui.

Ye Xiao's needles were still flying in the sky. The flying knives was not in the air anymore, with some of them deeply embedded into the wall. Ning Biluo swayed his sword like it was a long dragon swimming in the water. The monster who had been famous twenty years earlier was forced to a negative situation by Ning Biluo's beautiful attacks.

The flying needles in the air were distracting Hua Liushui. He couldn't deal with Ning Biluo with full effort! He was now still fighting Ning Biluo, without a clear winner yet. That showed his powerful strength already!

Zhao Pingtian and Liu Changjun looked at each other. They didn't want to watch Ning Biluo's fight any longer. They just rushed into the inner room of Second Prince!

[Master said we can't leave any survivor this time!]

[That is an order and we must obey!]

Ye Xiao watched the fight on a side. A smile showed up on his face. He didn't get into the fight, instead, he just kept his hands in his sleeves. Two knives were held inside there. If anything went wrong... the two knives would become the last killing strike!

He would kill that old man and save his loyal friend!

Suddenly, Song Jue sneered and got into the place with blood on him. He was making enormous killing qi. He saw the fight and then shouted loudly. He flew up high and then swayed over his sword to hit Hua Liushui's head fiercely!

Before he did it, he didn't say a word. That sword attack was overwhelming!

A few seconds earlier, Hua Liushui hit off all the flying needles in the air and finally felt relieved.

The needles weren't so powerful, but the poison scared him a lot. The way the needles flew was unpredictable. Hua Liushui felt fearful. Finally, he finished off all the needles.

He was confident that he could defeat Ning Biluo one to one!

However, when he just felt relieved a bit, an unbearable forceful qi was falling down on him. It contained a sense of brutality and a mass of huge power!

That was really a barbaric way to attack!

Hua Liushui didn't dare to be reckless. He shouted and raised up his sword so hard!

He did it with full effort to defend the death attack!

- Clang! -

An extreme bombing sound shocked the place. It was like a natural born man of unusual strength holding a giant hammer hitting on a steel!

As he defended it, he exclaimed and blood came out from his seven orifices!

He spat out blood and it shot on the floor!

His body suddenly became half shorter! In fact, the lower half of him was hit to the floor like a nail by Song Jue!

Only with one hit, he broke the master who had been so famous in the world!

That sword strike shocked Ning Biluo. He looked at Song Jue for a long time. He had never thought that the steward in the House of Ye actually had such an overwhelming power!

Steward Song obviously enjoyed the look on Ning Biluo. He smiled.

In fact, Song Jue was also full of questions at the moment. How did Ye Xiao recruit so many powerful assassins?

How on earth did he get so many of them together within a short time?

- Puff! -

Hua Liushui, who had half his body on the floor, spat out blood again. He had been truly smashed badly. Suddenly, he grabbed a red ball in his right hand and then swallowed it quickly.

Suddenly, his face became florid again. He shouted and then his body was totally lifted out off the floor. He ran fast to the door than anybody could react!

No. He was not rushing to the door. He was rushing to Bing-Er!

It was the same direction. He thought that he could either get away this place or capture Bing-Er!

As long as he could do either of the two things, he would definitely survive!

Even Song Jue, the terribly powerful man, couldn't kill him!

Song Jue was furious. He and Ning Biluo jumped up together and flew after Hua Liushui. Ye Xiao was about to make the attack with the flying knives in his hands too...

However, at this moment, right before Ye Xiao could do it, Hua

Liushui suddenly trembled. He exclaimed like a crazy man and fell to the floor like a dead frog!

He exclaimed with hopelessness, "What... What is going on!"

While he was rushing towards Bing-Er, the latter suddenly turned over and looked at him.

The pretty eyes of her suddenly became all black! Totally black eyes!

They were like deep dark holes staring back at him with coldness!

Just one glimpse!

It seemed there was some marvelous spiritual power coming out from her eyes, which invaded Hua Liushui's mind.

It was just in an instant. Hua Liushui felt headache like his head was exploding!

His heart suddenly stopped beating too!

He was extremely terrified!

He didn't know why, but he just felt scared with no reason. He was so scared that he couldn't move!

He fell to the floor all of a sudden. With his cultivation power, he actually didn't operate any defensive art to protect his body. He hit so hard on the floor and his waist bone dislocated. He paused for seconds before exclaiming horribly!

There was white froth coming out from his mouth too.

...

Chapter 540: Extermination!

While Bing-Er rushed to Second Prince, the prince was scared but he could still step back. The guards around him were killed instantly by Ye Xiao. As the sword light was getting closer, Second Prince nearly lost his soul. He begged, "My lady, please show mercy. I am..."

Bing-Er hated him so much. She didn't care what he was going to say. She wouldn't show mercy for sure! She kicked on him and he fell to the floor. And then her sword was on his neck and she slapped on his face fast and fierce.

When she finished slapping, the prince had become a pig head. Bing-Er finally suddenly came back to herself.

She looked at the prince who was hit into such a miserable look. She couldn't believe it.

[Since... Since when did I become so vicious?]

As she was thinking, she could feel the murderous intent and brutality that she had before rising up again! She couldn't suppress it!

As things happened and she was extremely furious, that feeling had occurred to her several times.

Every time when the feeling came to her, she felt like she was

somebody else!

It made her feel uncomfortable. However, when she saw the bloody mess in this place, she just frowned and didn't really feel the discomfort she thought she would feel.

[Can this change of my mind keep me from the negative feelings in the fight?]

She didn't have time to think deeper before that Mister Hundred Flowers rushed over to her.

That old monster was seriously injured, but in his eyes, there was still endless lechery!

Apparently, he was trying to get away through the door near her.

Or he was planning to capture her!

The look in his eyes told Bing-Er an extremely horrible possibility.

At the moment, Bing-Er was furious. That brutal feeling burst in her heart immediately.

She only felt that a strong killing qi shot out from her eyes! It was incredible! At the same time, she felt a strange power...

She was just staring at Hua Liushui. When she was going to draw the sword to cut that old monster, she felt that power in her eyes had burst out and hit on the old man...

The next moment, Hua Liushui exclaimed and fell on the floor!

He hit on the floor hard!

He was trembling on the floor and couldn't get up.

Bing-Er was stunned. She didn't even know what to do with the current situation.

[What... What is going on?]

[I just looked at him. That is all. I didn't do anything else!]

[Right. Must be it. He has been seriously damaged, so when he flew over, he didn't have enough energy to get on me. The wounds inside him burst. It wasn't my eyes... It mustn't be...]

Bing-Er thought this way. It seemed this was the most reasonable explanation now!

Hmm. The most persuasive reason!

However, it might not be the truth!

"Keep several men alive!" Ye Xiao flew over and got on Hua Liushui. He stepped hard on his back. At the same time, he asked Ning Biluo and the others, "Second Prince's trusted ones. Keep them alive so we can ask them some questions!"

Ning Biluo smiled. "Don't worry. We had them all. None of them escaped!"

Hua Liushui exclaimed under Ye Xiao's foot. He spat out blood again. At the moment, his eyes were no more randy. There was only fear. He looked at Bing-Er and spoke like he was looking at a ghost, "You..."

Ye Xiao grabbed his hair and raised his head. He slapped hard on his face and spoke in disdain, "Shut the fxck up you old goatish prick!"

- Pah -

Half of the teeth in Hua Liushui's mouth fell off and hit the floor!

The old man suddenly became toothless. At least a half toothless!

With a shout, Zhao Pingtian and Liu Changjun walked out from the inner room with blood on their swords.

"Master, all men in Second Prince's Palace were killed. None

missed!"

"None of them were innocent, right?"

"No. How unbelievable. Even the concubines of this prince are this old randy bastard's disciples! Besides..."

Zhao Pingtian glanced at the prince in disdain. "I could never imagine that he is not only a brothel runner, but also a cuckold! It is the first time I ever know such a thing in my life. I guess with such a stupid prince, the Kingdom of Chen would definitely be remembered in the future, even no one knew if it could conquer the entire world."

Liu Changjun loudly laughed. "That's right. We kept two girls alive. They are the maids. They are his private maids and also important girls in the Voluptuous Flower Building. I just cannot imagine it. How come all the people he recruited are scumbags!"

"We kept two of his advisors alive too. They..."

"Enough! I don't want to hear it anymore. Let's just cut it here. I wonder how many times I need to wash my ears today now. Do not put this disgusting dirt into my ears no more!"

Ye Xiao said, "This is enough. Take him and let's head back. We will interrogate him as soon as possible tonight! Liu Changjun, lead the assassins team back. We have made a big noise here. I am afraid the Royal Guards will arrive soon. We should better avoid

fighting them..."

Liu Changjun said yes and then flew out like a swallow. Orders sounded outside right after that.

"Head count!"

"Yes!"

"Two hundred and seventy-five servants and sixty maids. Seventeen concubines. Two of them are alive while the others are all dead. Checked!"

"Count the dead bodies again!"

"Yes!"

"Five hundred guards died. None survived!"

"Count again!"

"Yes!"

"There are..."

"Double check! All heads on their necks should be chopped off!"

"Yes!"

"Quick!"

...

"Checked!"

"Checked!"

"Good! Heads here, body parts there! Tidy up! Do not ruin the beautiful scene!"

"Yes!"

"All of you, retreat!"

- Shoot, shoot... -

Sounds came up. The assassins outside immediately disappeared in the darkness before dawn.

Chapter 541: World-shocking Case!

Not long after Liu Changjun and his assassins left, the earth started to shake.

It was said that the police always arrives after a murderer leaves. It seemed the royal guards of the Chen-Xing City were just the same!

However, Ye Xiao's men did it so quickly this time.

It was like lightning, powerful and fast!

The royal guards actually had a quick reaction to come this fast.

Lots of royal guards were marching over from far away.

Ye Xiao humphed, "Those who should arrive are coming. It is time for us who should leave to go. Take these men and let's move!"

Ye Xiao, Ning Biluo, Zhao Pingtian, Song Jue and Binger grabbed the six survivors, jumped on the wall like birds, and then disappeared together.

- Crunch, crunch, crunch... -

The army arrived from everywhere. - Shoot, shoot, shoot... -

Many superior cultivators flew into the yard, however, they were too late.

They were absolutely be late!

- Boom! - The door of the Second Prince's Palace was broken. Soldiers rushed into the place, armed and armored.

They were all shocked by what they saw there.

[Is this... Is this a prince's palace?]

What they saw was only a yard with blood everywhere. In the center of the yard, there were lots of dead bodies. They were piled up in the same place—those were all headless bodies!

They were even sorted by genders and height.

The bodies had no heads, but the heads were not difficult to find. They were just piled up in front of all those bodies... A stack of heads!

Countless heads were like watermelons in the market, piled up high like a mountain!

If these were watermelons, the owner must be a very rich man! Such a great business!

In fact, it was also a lot of work for the murderers!

The smell of blood was so dense. It felt like it had become materialized as it spread in the yard.

The palace was like a death zone!

It was silent!

"Check the heads!" The general who led these men was both stunned and angry. He was trembling.

He just glanced at this, and he knew the men in the palace were almost all killed before they arrived to help!

[This is...]

"Sir! The Prince and the two maids of his are missing. The others are all murdered, including the concubines! Heads off!"

The soldier was checking the name book. It pissed off the general. He slapped on the soldier's face and said, "You stupid sh*t! Can't you just say murder? Do you have to say heads off and stuff? I am going to cut your head off, I dare you!"

The soldier covered his face and humbly got away. He was thinking, [God damn it! Didn't you tell me to specify it? You said that. 'If the heads are cut off, you must specify it.' Heads off. That

is it! No matter what you say, you cannot change the fact. Damn it. Now you blame me for it. What the...]

"World-shocking Fxcking Case!"

The general was sweating already. Cold sweat moistened his heavy clothes, and his eyes were opened up like two light bulbs!

Right in the capital!

The Second Prince's Palace was in a bloodshed! All dead! No survivors!

That was such a true world-shocking case!

That was the house of the king's son!

What should he say to the king now?

"Cordon off the city! Hunt the murderer down!" the general shouted so loudly that he almost broke his throat! He was extremely furious!

[Why! Why does it have to happen while I am on duty!!!]

[Heavens do not want me to live anymore!]

"This... We have to make a report to the Ministry of Penalty and... the king..." The general almost teared up. "I am done. I am done..."

The soldiers looked at each other.

They were all wondering while watching the miserable situation. [Who did Second Prince mess with? He actually got his family wiped out in one night?]

[Back then when two great sects came and broke in the palace, they didn't wipe them out!]

[How powerful the murderer must be that they could do this?]

The capital was in disturbance again at dawn!

These were two miserable nights really. The first night, the capital was in a mess with lots of death, not to mention the Royal House was even nearly ruined. Even after a full day's recovery work, the kingdom was still in troubles.

The next night, the entire Second Prince's Palace was wiped out!

[What does that mean?]

[Was the murderer only here to do it against the Second Prince or did he aim at somebody else? Is it only for the men in the royal

house or everybody is a target?]

[Will there be another victim?]

Before the sun rose, the capital was in chaos!

Horns sounded and horse steps too!

Even the previous night, none of the royal house people got killed!

However, the entire house of a prince got killed!

Those were thousands of people!

The doors in the city were all closed. Soldiers on horses were all around the city. They were searching the city, which began on a grand and spectacular scale!

When the king heard of this astonishing news, he was taking the morning report.

When he heard it, he started to quiver and his face turned pale. He gritted his teeth and said in a low voice, "Track!"

Just a simple word!

And then he put this away and continued to discuss other things.

He seemed to not care about it. At least he looked like so.

Under the officials' concerning eyes, the king seemed to be fine; he was even calm and solemn. He took care of the kingdom's businesses carefully and logically.

When it was late in the morning, people left the court. All the reports were taken care of. The king stood up and walked out the royal hall. He walked in a firm and strong steps.

[What a king! Such stability! How extraordinary!]

The king was sad and shocked, they saw it after all. However, he was still taking the kingdom as the most important thing. He just kept the sad news to himself.

The officials sighed and left.

Nobody knew that when the king got back to his room after taking a long, firm and strong walk, he staggered and then spat out blood!

...

Chapter 542: Inquest!

After that, the king fell back on the floor!

"Yong-Er..."

Tears fell down!

The king always knew that his second son was not a capable man. He knew that this son would never get any great achievement, however, even though he knew that he must have had messed up with someone he should never have... that he was unforgivable... but...

[Even though he is so wrong... he is after all my son!]

[He is my son!]

The king lied on the floor with tears on his cheeks... [Who was it?]

[Who attacked the palace?]

[Why so brutal! Why so merciless!]

...

The king raged and the thunder sounded!

The entire kingdom was immediately in chaos.

All houses were checked. Soldiers walked on the streets like tigers and wolves. They ran amuck in the city. Generals, leaders, captains... They were all showing dark faces.

They looked at everybody like they were looking at a murderer. Everyone was a suspect!

Suddenly, everybody started to worry about safety in this big city!

Many people who had attended the fight of the two great sects hid in the city. They had gotten away from the investigation earlier, yet now they were found out. It surely proceeded much strictly this time!

...

"Second Prince." Ye Xiao sat on the chair. He looked at the prince with cold eyes as he casually spoke, "Now, the city is in chaos because of the bloodshed in your palace. The king loves you so much. Who says royal people have no family factions! That is so wrong."

Second Prince looked at Ye Xiao with a pair of swollen and terrified eyes.

[You devil!]

The man in front of him was exactly a devil!

Over a dozen years earlier, he didn't realize, or he wouldn't even think it was possible that this young stupid son of General Ye was actually such a horrible figure.

However, now he knew it, but it was too late. He was in the devil's hand now!

[Do I have a chance to survive this?]

What happened earlier the night was a nightmare to him!

The guards he trusted were cut on the throat and their heads just flew up around him. The heads then fell down around his feet. That was the beginning of the nightmare. It lasted till the current moment, yet was far from the end. There might never be an end to this nightmare. The end of this nightmare might just be his death!

"Ye Xiao, do not be reckless. You should better just let me go now. If your filthy plan is exposed, you entire clan will be wiped out. You will all die without an intact body! What my father is doing today shows lots of things. You are just a normal person, yet you dare to offend the royal house's honor! That is treason! Ye Xiao, you deserve to die!" Second Prince gasped and shouted in a hoarse voice.

He knew what he said wouldn't threaten Ye Xiao at all, but he just couldn't let go of any possibility to live!

"Please calm down, your honor. Don't shout so loudly though. Lower your voice and I may be able to listen to you clearly." Ye Xiao had a drink of tea and said, "And do not have any stupid fantasies now. I won't change anything just because of your stupid words. I won't even listen to you! You are like staying dozens of meters below me now!"

"I can just let you shout as you like, but no matter how you try it, nobody will hear you. However, I just think it is boring to let you waste your energy." Ye Xiao coldly smiled.

"By the way, your honor, no matter how determined your father is... Let me guess, will your father come and check the Northern General's House?"

Ye Xiao asked with a wicked smile.

Second Prince fell on the floor like his bones were all broken when he heard Ye Xiao. He shook his head and his eyes were gloomy.

Everybody knew how important Ye Nantian was to the kingdom!

Second Prince surely knew how important he was to his father!

Nobody could threaten him!

Even when the soldiers had to search the royal house, they would never dare to make trouble for the Northern General's House!

It was after all the safest place in the capital. Even the foreign forces and assassins wouldn't dare to attack this place, no matter how big a distraction they made in the entire city!

Everybody knew that it was a bad idea to mess with Ye Nantian. If Ye Nantian swayed his sword and said, 'Find out the man who mess around in my house!', then no matter who the man was, he would just be pushed out and take the responsibility.

They wouldn't want to see General Ye in anger!

That was all!

It was a big reason enough!

Only Ye Nantian had such power in the entire Land of Han-Yang!

No one else did!

Not long earlier, Ye Nantian had just massacred tens of thousands assassins from all over the world when they tried to stand in his way!

He did it quick!

He did it powerfully!

He was a man that was hard to kill! He was an invincible general!

Nobody wanted to mess with him!

Even the king of the three most powerful kingdoms in the world!

Ye Xiao was his only son!

Ye Xiao was the only person he loved in the world!

Second Prince felt helpless now. He knew the King would never find him. It was simply impossible. How could he get saved if nobody found him?

Ye Xiao smiled and gently talked, "Even if the king finds Second Prince, I want Second Prince to make a guess. Can he save his son from my control, seriously?"

It was like a lightning striking into Second Prince's heart!

Second Prince had been fighting against his own brothers for many years, so he wasn't that ignorant. He had seen the power Ye Xiao had. That unbelievably powerful Steward Song, and the three

horrible assassins, any of them had the power to shock the world.

He thought Hua Liushui was such an experienced and powerful man, the top of the world, however, Hua Liushui was played like a kid. Hua Liushui wasn't weak at all though. Second Prince knew that Hua Liushui was stronger than any of the great masters in the royal house. Since Hua Liushui was strong, then it only proved that Ye Xiao was too powerful!

...

Chapter 543: Torture!

[It seems the World's No. 1 Assassin Ning Biluo was among the three assassins. I heard that he should be Ling-Bao Hall's man. The battle in Ling-Bao Hall earlier was such a breaking news to the world. He actually comes and help Ye Xiao. Ye Xiao must be very close to Ling-Bao Hall.]

[How powerful! Even my father can never afford messing with him!]

[Why didn't you just show me a little bit of your true power. If I can just realize a bit of how powerful you are, I will never mess with you. No beauty is more important than my own life!]

Thinking of that, Second Prince totally broke down. He had been hopeless, but now he was totally broken!

Ye Xiao looked at him with cold eyes and blandly said, "Do you think you still have a chance to get away here?"

Second Prince shook his head.

[Forget about help... Forget about power... I was in my own place and you still captured me away. My men all died under your men. I am alone now, sinking in this sh*t pond. How do I escape from this invisible cage?]

"Well then, why don't you just behave yourself? At least you may

hold on for a few more days. Right?" Ye Xiao asked.

"I..." Second Prince tried to answer him.

"What? I told you to shut up, didn't I? You just can't be nice, can you?" Ye Xiao half closed his eyes; he looked so vicious at the moment. He swayed a long whip. - Pah! - Second Prince screamed. He was badly split on the skin!

Blood burst out.

"Let me ask you again. Behave yourself and we will have a nice conversation. How about that?" Ye Xiao nicely asked, "In fact, I am so curious that I need to know something. You are going to tell me, alright?"

Second Prince was suffering great pain. He was trembling as he humbly answered, "What... What do you want to know?"

- Pah! -

Another whip. Second Prince almost passed out because of the unbearable pain. He heard Ye Xiao continue saying softly, "I will tell you what I want to ask! What do you think you are? You dared to ask me a question? Don't you know how to behave? Oh right, animal doesn't understand human words. Hmmm... Do you know language?"

Second Prince was trembling. He finally tasted the true fear that

could freeze one's heart. He nodded.

- Pah! -

Whip again.

"Why did you nod? Do you really think I have no idea what language you can speak? You just said something, and now you acted like you couldn't!" Ye Xiao said with anger, "Look at your twisted face. You nodded. Do you hate me that much?"

"Now show me a smile! Be happy! Tell me with pleasure that you accept my inquest! Understand? Can you? Do I need to teach you again? Not with my mouth of course, with the whip! Whip is always a good choice to torture animals like you!" Ye Xiao viciously spoke.

Second Prince broke down even more. He realized that Ye Xiao was simply playing him. However, he had to endure it. Even though he knew it was just an absurd play, he had to take it!

"Lord Ye... At this time, could you please..." Second Prince tried to get sympathy.

After all, it was so unbearable to be played and tortured like this. He wanted to get as much mercy as he could from Ye Xiao!

- Pah! -

It was a quick whip! Fast and loud! A piece of skin was whipped off Second Prince. He screamed and nearly passed out again. Ye Xiao coldly smiled. "Who the fxck do you think you are talking to? Do you think you are still the noble prince? Guess what. Here. Now. You are just a damned dog! Pah! Dogs are close to people. You are so much worse than dogs! You filthy animal!"

"Your life is less worthy than a dog's now!"

"What you are going to do is to follow my words! If you cannot make it, or do it wrong, you know what will get on you!" Ye Xiao moved the whip in his hand and brutally smiled. "I believe you understand that I truly don't have faith in you. In fact, I wish you cannot do it."

The viciousness he showed in the words made Second Prince forget the pain on his body!

"I will... Accept your inquest..." He fought back the pain on his body and the shame in his heart. He tried so hard to show a smile on his face, and spoke in a low voice.

"That is some real ugly smile! Are you dissing me?" Ye Xiao raged up and whipped over.

- Pah, pah, pah... -

Second Prince screamed and screamed! When Ye Xiao stopped, he

had already lost the shape of a man. The pain was everywhere on his body. He felt dizzy; he felt he would die at any second.

He even felt that death was way much better than the torture here!

[Come on! Do it! Kill me!]

He thought.

However, Ye Xiao stopped.

He took a supreme dan bead from inside his clothes!

That was a marvelous dan bead. Second Prince never had any before, but he hadn't seen it.

Supreme Dan!

Ye Xiao grabbed Second Prince on the jaw and pushed the precious dan bead into his mouth.

A warm feeling got down from his mouth to his body. He felt so comfortable.

The wounds on his were recovering in a fast speed.

However, he didn't feel happy about it at all, even though he had finally tasted a supreme dan bead. He widely opened his eyes that were filled with fear. He looked at the wounds being healed rapidly as he felt despair.

The feeling of pain was still there, but the wounds were already healed. The skin became smooth and good again...

"You want to die? Not that easy!" Ye Xiao nodded gently and nicely. "Your honor, I am a man with honor. I said I will keep you alive and make you beg for life. How can I just let you die this way! If I let you die this easy..."

Ye Xiao's face became twisted because of anger. "How do I comfort the eight hundred thousand young lives that you ruined!"

Eight hundred thousand lives!

When he said these words, Second Prince closed his eyes in desperation.

[Of course it is. Of course he knew!]

Ye Xiao looked at the prick and gasped. He did it on purpose. He just wanted to torture the prince. He wanted to try every brutal way on him. Reasonable or not. Honorable or not. He just wanted this prick to suffer!

He even used a supreme dan bead on him, just because he wanted

to keep him alive so that he could go on torturing him!

However, he didn't feel satisfied yet. Not enough!

[Filthy monster!]

...

Chapter 544: Anger of Man and Heavens!

"Let's cut the b*llshit and be frank now." Ye Xiao tried to control his anger and blandly spoke, "Whatever your men have done, how many people have you ordered them to kill, everything, go on, tell me everything! Remember, smile. Say it quick! I don't have all day to play with you scum! If you don't smile, or you say it wrong, or you say it slowly, you know what would happen! Don't you!"

He whipped on the floor. - Pah! -

Second Prince was terrified. "Okay... Okay... I'll do it..."

"You didn't smile! Why? You are not satisfied with the way I treat you?"

Ye Xiao gave him a vicious slash again.

Second Prince screamed and then hurriedly smiled. He tried so hard to make himself look nice and sincere. "My men..."

Ye Xiao turned around and stopped the whip eventually.

One of the Blood Guards was concentrated on recording Second Prince's narrative on a book.

In fact, this man was totally frightened by what his master was doing right now! He didn't know there was actually such a vicious

way to torture people in this world!

The one who was tortured was actually a prince of the kingdom!

[A hero father has a heroic son. Young lord is no weaker than the General at all...]

[But... Is this a noble thing to do?]

[Wouldn't it force the prince to confess to false charges?]

[It is not right to do such a vicious torture!]

The man couldn't agree with it, but he still kept recording it fast...

However, after a while, he suddenly stopped. He stood up from the chair and loudly shouted. His eyes had turned red. He took the whip and hit the Second Prince like crazy. He whipped him with his all strength!

The prince was rolling and screaming on the floor in front of him with blood on the body. He didn't look like a human shape now, but the guard didn't want to stop!

Ye Xiao stopped him and fed Second Prince a supreme dan bead again. Otherwise, the prince would have died under the merciless whip!

"Son of a bxtch! You bloody monster! Fxck you! Fxck you father! Fxck you entire family..."

"You motherfxcker! You sick motherfxcker!"

"You fxcking sick animal..."

...

As he cursed crazily, he hit the prince, totally forgetting what he should be doing!

The things Second Prince confessed was too much of a sin! Only an animal would do such things! He had completely lost his humanity!

"So many brothers splashed their blood and died for the country! After all those fights, when they returned home and found their sisters gone, their wives gone... Fxck you! You son of a bxtch! You are not a human being!"

He shouted and whipped. At last, he cried.

"How many brothers died in the battle for your kingdom... You fxcking animals. How many died in the wild... When they returned with their crippled bodies, for god's sake, when they were home and finally had the chance to see their families again, they couldn't

find them..."

"They shed their blood in the front line! You bastard! You murdered their wives and sisters and daughters! You are not a human being! You are an animal! You are an animal!!"

He cried out loud, "My sister is missing... My sister is gone... In her perfect age. She is gone. She is my sister! My little sister..."

"That year, I couldn't join the battle because of my crippled right leg. I got the permission from General that I could finally come home. When I was home, I saw my parents in sorrow. They told me that my sister hadn't come back since she went out someday earlier. She was gone..."

"Those were miserable days... Father and I prayed and prayed that she would come back. In the end, I gave up. I didn't expect that she would still come back. I hoped that she was working as a maid, or was married to somebody somewhere... I just hoped that she was still alive..."

"Just now, I realized it. The tiny hope that father and I had is broken!" He cried and cried. And then he cursed, "There is actually such a group of bloody animals walking in the world! You evil, unethical fxcking bastard!"

"Fxck you! Fxck you father! You actually are the king's son! I actually swore loyalty to your father! Fxck you whole clan you piece of shxt!"

Ye Xiao sighed.

Second Prince was beaten up into a bloody pulp again. He was extremely scared as he tried to dodge the whips...

He didn't dare to look into anybody's eyes!

"Keep recording!" Ye Xiao said, "Brother Li, put it down clearly! We will take revenge on every word you put on it! If you kill him like this right now, it will be such a shame to not let him suffer enough. I want him to live a long long life, begging for death!"

"Nothing should be missed in the record!"

"It is not only concerned to your sister, also all the girls in the world! Do your job! Finish it and I promise you, you will have your time to get to him! You will have the chance to do whatever you want to do to torture him!"

Ye Xiao spoke in a heavy voice.

"Thank you, my lord, for the justice!" Li kneeled down and kowtowed to Ye Xiao. "My lord, please promise me, let me join you when you are going to wipe all these bastards out!"

"I am going to avenge my sister myself! I am going to kill them with my own hands!"

He looked burning in fury!

"Okay! I promise!" Ye Xiao made a long sigh.

...

The same tortures were going on in other private rooms.

Assassins became executors. They used the most vicious methods they knew to torture those people! Whatever was most scary, most brutal, and most immoral, they just used them again and again!

Ye Xiao had prepared to pay a great deal to let those people suffer the worst torture. He gave the assassins many supreme dan beads. If any of those men was dying, they should feed him a dan bead and then go on with the torture!

With the supreme dan beads, those monsters would never die no matter how badly they wanted to!

The assassins had killed a lot in their lives, but compared to these monsters, they felt like the nicest people in the world!

They just knew that there were such vile people in the world for real!

Those were such vile and brutal sins!

Chapter 545: Deserving to Die!

Song Jue was in charge of the inquest on Hua Liushui himself. Surely, he had tortured him badly. However, Hua Liushui was a tough man. He endured it for about an hour!

Song Jue was furious!

[How dare you play tough now?

Fine! Let's see how tough you can be!]

He then took out a knife and kept stabbing into Hua Liushui's body about eighty times! All in fatal places!

While he stabbed, he swore, "Fxck fxck fxck fxck fxck..."

Blood kept pouring out!

"Haha... Low skills. Are you trying to kill me? Do you... think... I would fear death..."

Hua Liushui spoke in a sneering tone. He could feel his life fading away. He wanted death.

However, the next moment, Song Jue wickedly smiled and fed him a supreme dan bead...

The marvelous dan bead immediately brought Hua Liushui back to health. His wounds recovered so fast and he was completely cured. Song Jue took the knife and kept stabbing him again...

"Fxck, fxck, fxck, fxck, fxck..."

Another supreme dan bead!

And then he stabbed again!

After five times, Hua Liushui finally showed weakness... He started to cry and beg for mercy. He really hadn't thought that there was actually such a brutal person in the world!

There was no strategy at all in the inquest.

It was only about torturing. He killed him and saved him, again and again!

Death was something Hua Liushui could dream of now!

After dangling on the edge of death and returning to the miserable life five times, Hua Liushui was the only person who knew how painful it felt!

He was completely broken down...

He started to beg. He did everything he could to beg for mercy!

However, Steward Song wouldn't care. He did the sixth time... - Puff, puff, puff, puff... - Knife stabbed again and again...

The sixth?

That didn't seem to be the end. Maybe there would be the seventh, an eighth, or even ninth!

There was still a long time before Steward Song felt bored about this game!

Hua Liushui claimed to be the most evil man in the world. He had thought that there was no one in the world that could be more vicious than him! However, out of his expectation, the man who was torturing him was much worse than him and also stronger. There was always worse and there was always better...

"I am done... I will change... I promise... I give up..." Hua Liushui cried.

Tears were literally on his face!

At this moment, the regret in his heart was like the water in the Huanghe River.

[Why didn't I keep hiding outside the martial world? Why didn't I leave several days ago? I knew there were people coming over. I just felt I could be lucky enough... Why do I only regret only after I met this psychopath...]

The thing he wanted the most was medicine for regret. However, there truly was nothing like that at all!

"Speak! Go on!" Song Jue swayed the knife in his hand. Blood dropped off the knife and most of it dropped on Hua Liushui's face.

He was trembling, quivering.

[This... This is my blood!]

[This is so much blood... Blood of my heart... What is that white color thing? ... My brain? ...]

He was totally freaking out.

Who on earth could see his own brain come out from the head? Who could see his own heart in the world?

Who?

Nobody but Hua Liushui now!

He saw it six times within two hours!

There might be several times more!

He never feared death!

He felt that every day was blessed after escaping from death!

However, at this moment, he was so scared!

There was a devil in front of him who would never let him die but only let him suffer in pain!

He would return from the fatal injuries and get tortured time and time again!

Torturing him never ended!

And he was only tortured in the same way...

That was so frightful!

What a way to torture!

That was the worst way to beg for death!

Ning Biluo and Zhao Pingtian were much more peaceful compared to Song Jue. They didn't have the chance to do anything, because before they started to threaten, frighten, or torture, the men they questioned told everything.

Ning Biluo and Zhao Pingtian went completely mad after hearing it all though.

They had been curious why they were all sent to slaughter the entire Prince's Palace! They got the order, so they didn't think deeper about it. They just went and started the bloodshed.

Now, they finally got to know that there were so many unbelievable crimes hidden in the peaceful scene!

How brutal!

They finally knew that they were questioning a bunch of disgusting animals!

They got a list of names that were responsible for all the crimes. They looked at the list and their killing intent nearly filled the entire city!

They decided not to spare any of those men on the list!

Absolutely not!

Everyone should be tortured till death!

Even Rou-Er, who had been following Zhao Pingtian, who was so soft and gentle, was bursting with anger...

Ye Xiao had been spending a lot to make Soul Gathering Dan for Rou-Er. Now, she could turn into a mass of dark fog and move around the room.

She flew to where the Second Prince stayed and showed up from time to time...

It made the room more like hell with her existence.

Second Prince was scared to death!

He truly had done too many evil things!

He was just easy to get frightened!

However, when Zhao Pingtian saw her hazy face, he was stunned! He was crazy!

...

Chapter 546: I Will Carry the Sin!

Zhao Pingtian waited and waited. He wanted to see his beloved one on the 5th of July because that was the day when Yin and Yang were closest to each other. However, he never expected that she could turn into shape after taking many of the Soul Gathering Dan beads!

Actually, she was excited as well.

Looking at her running here and there to scare those men, Zhao Pingtian teared up.

Rou-Er didn't know she could be seen now though. She just kept moving around to scare those bad guys. [These bastards... They should have died long ago!]

Zhao Pingtian quietly looked at her as tears came running down on his cheeks.

He didn't want to interrupt Rou-Er.

Besides, it was not a good time to show such emotion..

His heart was filled with gratefulness!

[My lord! Monarch! Thank you!]

...

When the inquest was done, an entire day had passed.

It was turning dark again.

Second Prince and his men had become piles of meat and blood...

Ye Xiao took an account book in hand. He got it from Second Prince's Palace. It was one of over a dozen account books, though no important information was recorded on these books.

Whatever was important would never be recorded on books.

He could only get it from the inquests.

"There are many names that are not on these books! As expected! The book in his heart is the real one!"

Ye Xiao's eyes looked cold and sharp.

"I believe no one dared to lie in such an inquest. We questioned them separately and they were all basically telling the same things. I don't think they still have anything that they can lie about," Ning Biluo said.

Ye Xiao nodded to agree.

"Go get on with it. I need to know the number of all the men we need to kill. Do not miss a damn person. We can make the wrong kill, never wrong mercy!" He sighed. He seemed tired.

When he thought about those girls who had been captured, tortured, sold and killed, he felt gloomy!

Second Prince was not the only person who had been doing this business.

How many sins were hidden in this peaceful world?

How many innocent girls were killed just because of somebody's greediness?

Could he clean it all?

Could he kill all the men like that?

What should he do that could stop people doing such a filthy and unscrupulous thing?

"Even though we might not be able to kill them all, we have to do it! The more we kill, the less they ruin!" Ye Xiao viciously spoke.

"Counting done."

"How many?"

"Officials in the capital... there are six... One from the Penalty Ministry and one from Revenue Ministry. There is a general and two ministers..."

"Kill their entire clans. Do not miss anyone!"

"Yes, my lord!"

"There are two Voluptuous Flower Buildings in the capital. That is... one thousand five hundred and forty-six people!"

"Kill them all, and every person in their clans!" Ye Xiao fiercely spoke. "Especially those Discipline Supervisors... Work even harder on them. Do not let them die easily! Remember, kill every single person in their clans! Such men do not need to have children in the world!"

"Yes, my lord!"

"It is a huge system, the Voluptuous Flower Buildings outside the capital... A huge network... There are local officials and also men of the martial world participating... The number is... over eighteen thousand..." Zhao Pingtian sighed.

Voluptuous Flower Building had murdered so many lives.

Moreover, it gathered a lot of evil, vicious, and contemptible people. Humanity was weak in front of personal interests...

"Whoever is confirmed guilty, kill them all!"

"Let the assassins from Ling-Bao Hall do separate tasks!" Ye Xiao took in a long breath, "I want those men die! I want them suffer before death! They will go to hell after they die! I want them to taste it before they go!"

"I want every one of them to regret everything they have done!"

Ye Xiao had never hated anybody like this before! Such hatred had never shown in his heart ever.

Even the three factions in the Qing-Yun Realm didn't arouse such hatred!

He was just disdainful.

He had never had such a strong hatred ever!

The horrible crime of Second Prince and his men aroused the determination of massive slaughter in Xiao Monarch's heart!

He gave every order with the intent to kill!

"Yes, my lord! We will never spare any of those men!" Ning Biluo and Zhao Pingtian promised at the same time.

"Listen. Assassins from Ling-Bao Hall act in four groups, east, west, south and north. Give them a specific name list! Kill whoever shows up on the list! Bring evidence back! Whoever on the list are all completely evil, their entire clans should be wiped out. No mercy!"

Ye Xiao's eyes were filled with crazy killing qi!

The eight hundred thousand dead women totally made him burst in anger.

Some of the dead were wives and daughters of the soldiers who were fighting in the front line. That took away the last bit of mercy in his heart!

He had never thought that it would be too cruel to wipe out their clans, even if there were any innocent people among them.

[Innocent? Who can be more innocent than those girls and ladies?]

[I am cruel and brutal. Blame the one who participated in this evil thing then!]

[Heavens will see every sin! Evil will get retribution sooner or later. They will get what they planted! Nothing to complain about!]

Ye Xiao was completely unreasonable at the moment. He was too angry as he completely lost his sense and calmness!

"No law in this world will do the righteous punishment to these trash. Justice is late! Law cannot bring justice! Then I will bring justice to this world!"

He slowly stood up, his eyes full of killing intent. Word by word, he heavily spoke, "The heavens, the mortal world, the society, I will bring justice since nobody can!"

"I would love to carry the sin of murder!"

...

Chapter 547: Massacre Began!

The searching continued outside the house.

At least over a dozen groups of soldiers passed the gate of the House of Ye. Some of them had thought about getting in and searching the house, however, the blood guards at the door gave them fierce gaze, making them give up the idea.

"How dare you! You actually want to search Great General Ye's house?"

It wasn't people in the House of Ye who said that.

That was a general scolding the men who wanted to get into the house.

"Why don't you just break in? It will be the biggest fortune in your clan that the blood guards didn't beat you to death!"

The general scolded fiercely.

It was turning dark again. Night had come.

The city was lit up!

Disturbance in the city continued. Sounds of fights and shouts came from here and there from time to time. That should be some

foreign spies or assassins... They were found.

Things like this happened everywhere within the day. People had gotten used to it.

Well, it should be within the two days, but it never stopped...

The men who were sent to do the searching were actually just searching. They didn't disturb the citizens. Only little citizens were involved. Surely, the soldiers knew that the leadership had burst in anger. They had to finish the job as soon as they could. Making unnecessary troubles meant looking for death. This searching mission was the least disturbing one in history for the people in the city!

When the sky just turned dark, it was the most peaceful moment in the day. It was not the time to do anything at this time.

Something had been done by then, and something was yet to start. For a man to go home and sleep with his wife... it was far too early.

Most people were having dinner at this time, including the soldiers who had been working all day, even the fugitives. They were all human beings after all. They all needed to eat.

However, at this peaceful moment, two cruel things happened in the capital!

One happened in the east while the other in the west—two Voluptuous Flower Buildings, the most famous brothels in the capital, within fifteen minutes, were wiped out by an unknown force! The girls survived while others were all slaughtered... No one escaped, except all the girls!

Some of their customers stood out to stop the bloodshed but only ended up losing their life...

The discipline supervisors were dead in the most horrible way. Brutal was not bad enough to describe their misery!

Discipline supervisors worked in a brothel to torture the girls who wouldn't agree to stay! Those girls who were new and tough would end up being tortured in a most horrible way in those men's hands!

They were capable to make innocent girls surrender within a few days and become tools for the brothel! The girls would never love their bodies after the torture...

Those men could also make the most strong-willed girls become sluts. Thousands of men would ride on their bodies and they would sometimes beg for that...

Discipline supervisors were the most vicious men!

They never killed with knives or swords. They never took people's lives. What they killed were the souls and dignity of girls!

Loyalty and persistence of girls! They made girls lose their senses of shame and fall into the dark hole of erotic instinct...

What they did were only the most evil and contemptible things!

Brothels loved these discipline supervisors. One good discipline supervisor could bring a brothel great wealth.

Over a dozen discipline supervisors were slaughtered in each Voluptuous Flower Building in a nasty way!

Their entire families were wiped out at the same time! No exceptions! In many people's eyes, they were an ordinary family who just got killed... How poor!

However, none of them knew that they were families of the evil discipline supervisors!

A relative to such evil men, weak or strong, man or woman, or even a kid, deserved to die!

Only other discipline supervisors knew what exactly was going on. They were all terrified...

Ye Xiao was unbelievably cruel!

The assassins killed all the staff of Voluptuous Flower Building in Chen-Xing City. No one was missed. All the money in the brothel

was given away to the girls who were forced to work there.

They sent those girls back home as soon as they could.

At the end, they set up the buildings on fire and burned everything down!

Fire rushed to the sky as smoke covered half of the sky in the capital.

Two cases happened at the same time, west and east, and ended almost at the same time too.

It happened so fast!

It was fast like lightning!

The assassins were so professional that nobody could believe it.

After what was done, they left not even a bit of a trace. They just disappeared like they had never existed in the world!

The only thing they left were a pile of dead bodies on the floor!

The royal guards that were near these two places didn't even have time to finish their meals before they were sent to the crime scenes. The beautiful and luxurious Voluptuous Flower Buildings

became complete hell of blood and flesh.

Some of the royal guards couldn't help throwing up the food they had just eaten!

That was just too sanguinary!

"Crazy! That is insane!"

The leader of the group felt nothing but coldness.

"Under the bright light of day, under the feet of the son of heavens... In this universe of justice..." He couldn't go on anymore. He really couldn't bear it. The smell of blood made him throw up. After that, he suddenly realize that nothing was untouchable under the feet of the son of heavens anymore...

Somebody just wiped out the palace of the king's own son... Those crazy guys dared to do anything...

They wiped out the palace of the king's son, what else they didn't dare to do?

While the soldiers were counting the number of dead... Another world breaking report arrived!

"An official of the Ministry of Revenue died with all his family... Another official of Ministry of Penalty... And..."

The leader lost sight and passed out immediately.

...

Chapter 548: A City Full of Killing

[No more words were left to say. Is there any useful words now? I am all done. My career is done... My life may also be done.]

What happened earlier, including the slaughter in Second Prince's Place, were sudden events.

[Two days ago, the great sects attacked the palace but failed. Yesterday, they came back and wiped out the palace. Fine. It is reasonable that I couldn't save it. Great sects are too powerful to defeat, even the entire kingdom couldn't defeat them. I may get accused, but I have excuses!]

[The brothels are wiped out after the palace. It is in the same brutal way, but brothels are private places. Not a big deal. Nothing serious would get on me anyway.]

[But now... officials fell into such nasty murders inside my strict guarding circles... I guess the only thing that waits for me is the prison now...]

It was never the end though.

Fire showed up everywhere in the city. Bad news came to the leader again and again.

"An official's family are wiped out..."

"Another official..."

[Why...]

The leader was shocked by the simultaneous bad news. However, he actually stopped being gloomy now. He wouldn't care now. It would not be worse than death no matter how many more people died now. What could be worse for him anyway?

However, it looked like the gods were fooling this leader. While the murders happened again and again, something world breaking happened!

A long shout sounded in the sky!

People looked up to the sky.

On the top of the tallest tower in the capital, a masked man in black clothes stood there, his clothes fluttering in the wind. In his hands, he was dragging a mutilated body.

He moved his hand and the body fell off the tower to the ground!

People exclaimed! The body was like a broken bag falling fast from over a hundred meters high. It hit the floor and cracked into pieces!

The skull rolled away dozens of meters far. The eyes on it were

still open. Apparently, this guy didn't die in peace!

The skull was recognized at once!

"Second Prince!" somebody exclaimed.

The mutilated body that fell off the tower and hit the ground was Second Prince indeed, the king's second son!

Wiping out the entire palace was not enough. They even threw Second Prince from the top of the highest tower. As the skull showed, Second Prince should have been still alive before he hit the ground!

He fell to death!

His departed body showed that he had been tortured badly before death...

That was extremely bodacious to do such a thing in the capital!

The tower was shut down.

Soldiers were all around.

Somebody rushed to the royal house to report to the king.

"Oh... There seems to be something inside the prince's mouth..."
Somebody with sharp eyes found something, so he exclaimed!

It was a small scroll of paper inside his mouth!

Something was written on it...

A stream of blue light rushed to the sky and a resonant voice was shouting, "Second Prince is unscrupulous and evil! He deserves this! If I had another chance, I will kill him again! I will wipe out his family again! I won't leave him a full body! I will torture him to death!"

The blue light was like the ocean. It flashed in the sky and the resonant voice continuously reverberated in the air. The man rushed up again!

Apparently, he wanted to flee!

At this moment, two blue lights rushed up to the sky at the same time to catch him. "Monster! Die!"

Two top Sky Origin Stage cultivators of the royal house attacked!

The man in the sky coldly smiled. He didn't panic. Suddenly, he turned around and rushed back to clash head on with the two other men!

The wind was cold at night!

- Boom! - - Boom! - Two sounds!

Three superior cultivators met in the sky. Four hands of the three hit each other!

The man in the sky used both of his hands to hit on the two Sky Origin Stage cultivators' hands!

After a huge blast, the man wildly laughed. The blue lights on him started to flash fast. Purple light showed up among the blue. The splendid glow flashed and then disappeared in the sky.

Only his voice resounded in the air.

"How ridiculous, a piece of rice dares to shine upon pearls! How dare you think you can trap me here with your weak power! Ignorant!"

The stronger one won the fight. Nothing special!

The two masters of the royal house were both top Sky Origin Stage cultivators. Only after one palm strike, they both fell down from the sky like two kites without strings. They couldn't control their bodies now. People saw them spit out blood in the sky while falling...

Several men rushed over to catch them both. Otherwise, they would die on the ground for sure!

Silence!

Everyone realized how serious this was now!

Sky Origin Stage!

Top Sky Origin Stage cultivators!

Such men should be invincible in the Land of Han-Yang, like myths!

However, the murderer who killed Second Prince was actually someone beyond myths!

Horse and carriage were moving...

The king finally arrived!

The news about Second Prince's death and the appearance of the murderer arrived at the royal court. The officials in the court all suggested that the king shouldn't show himself before they figured out who the murderer was. However, when the king heard how his son died in a nasty way, he couldn't think of anything else anymore!

The king's horses and carriages arrived.

The king stepped out at once.

He looked at the blurred meat and blood the floor. Somebody had tried to put the pieces together to make it seem like a human shape. However, his attempt had surely failed.

They wondered what the murderer was thinking. The prince's body had been broken already, yet he still dropped him down from such a height... Only the prince's head could be recognized now. The other parts were... all gone!

...

Chapter 549: Smashed to Pieces

The king had always been calm and steady, but when he looked at the mess, he was tearful. Such a tall and strong man was suddenly drowned in his emotions.

It was his own son after all.

[He was never an obedient son, and many times he had let me down. He had wrong ambitions, and he wanted the throne too much... However, he is still my son!]

[He is now a pile of smashed meat and blood. How can I bear such pain?]

[I have been hoping that as long as he is still living, everything will be fine...]

[Now the cruel reality ruined my hope.]

[He is dead!]

[That is the reality!]

Crown Prince was standing right beside the king.

He fearfully looked at the smashed body. It didn't look like a person anymore.

[That is my brother.]

[He was such a threat to me! Such a powerful opponent for the throne!]

[Yet now he is just a pile of smashed flesh!]

"Son..." The king took in a deep breath. "Come and take your brother... back home."

He walked forward, staggering. He couldn't walk as vigorously as he usually did anymore.

Somebody wanted to stop him, but the king gave him a glance of anger. His eyes were cold like a sword blade. Nobody dared to stop him anymore.

[Take him back home?]

Crown Prince's throat was moving. He nearly puked out.

However, his father was walking over, so he had to follow up. Just after a few steps, his legs started to tremble. He had to try so hard to step firmly.

He had to go over.

Before this, his second brother was his biggest opponent.

The death of Second Prince gave him the biggest advantage!

Crown Prince knew that everybody was looking at him. He was a suspect.

Even his father very likely had suspicions against him!

Otherwise, the king might have not asked him to bring his brother home!

[But I didn't kill him...]

Crown Prince felt that he was wronged.

[I really... didn't do this...]

[Fucking stupid fool. He was against me all his life. Now he is dead, yet his death brings me troubles... Fuck his... Wait... Not his families...]

The king staggered, but he continued with firm steps.

He walked over step by step. Guards had surrounded the entire area. Nobody was allowed to get in here!

The king didn't care about what was happening around. He just wanted to walk over and have a look at his son.

He finally saw the head of his son. The eyes were still open, and the mouth was widely opened too... There was something inside the mouth!

[Is that... a scroll of paper?]

The king's eyes lit up.

A guard wanted to help, but the king shook his head. He walked over and got down to hold the head in his arms. He touched the eyelids to close the eyes, which were full of fear.

And then he took out the paper from the mouth of his son.

In fact, he wanted to tear the paper into pieces... He didn't want to read it!

However, he unfolded it after all.

As he unfolded it, he couldn't move his sight anymore!

When Crown Prince saw the words on the paper, he was stunned!

On the first page, a few lines were written.

"Reason for Second Prince's death. Eight hundred and forty-six brothels and a million dead souls! Such crime! It is a blessing to the world that he died! We will lose justice if we don't kill him! His sin should lead to the extermination of his clan"

The writing looked so fierce and wild, with vivid killing qi!

The king half closed his eyes.

He turned over the paper and read the second page. When he read half of it, he trembled as his face turned red. He loosened his grip, and the head of Second Prince dropped to the ground. - Puff! -

The head rolled and jumped quite a distance on the floor!

The king couldn't care about it anymore.

His eyes were blank, and his face turned pale, like there was no blood in him.

Crown Prince was curious. He took a closer look. The first page was written with large characters, so he could still see it from a distance. The second page was written with smaller font, so he had to get closer.

The first line...

"Voluptuous Flower Building. Real owner: Second Prince."

"A ten-year business that built up hundreds of branches. Six hundred inside Kingdom of Chen, eight hundred and forty-six in total in the Land of Han-Yang. One hundred and fifty thousand young women were killed every year for the last ten years. Over one and a half million in total. Now we killed this devil, wiped out his family, only to bring justice to the world!"

What came next were words that testified the crimes!

There were signatures of Second Prince at the end of every line.

The names that were mentioned on the paper were even a little familiar to the king...

The evidence it showed was undeniable!

The king's hands were shaking. He was trembling.

Finally, he loudly shouted to the sky!

In his voice, there was anger and sorrow!

"Arhhhhhh!"

"Father!" Crown Prince hurriedly held the king.

"Go home!" Blood had come out from the king's mouth.

He closed his eyes and weakly spoke, "Let's just go home!"

"Father!" Crown Prince exclaimed in shock.

[What is this?]

[Father approves the things that were listed on the paper? If so...]

"I said, go home!" The king said it again while gritting his teeth.

The muscles on his face were shaking. His hands grabbed the paper so hard! Blue veins even showed up on the back of his hand!

The things on the paper were obviously true. All accusation had evidences and the prince's signature!

The king didn't fully believe it, but at least seventy percent of it.

The thirty percent of trust to Second Prince was only because he was his father. Now that Second Prince died in such a brutal way, the king really didn't want to judge him like this!

Even one among the crimes shown on the paper could lead to

death penalty! But there was actually so many!

As it stated, clan extermination was not excessive at all!

However, if all those things were true, not only Second Prince should bear the shame and charges, even the entire royal house would be disgraced. Moreover... when there were people like this from the royal family, the subjects would have a change of heart for the king and the royal clan. If somebody used this to provoke rebellion in such a dangerous time, it would shock the foundation of the entire kingdom!

...

Chapter 550: Crazy Slaughter!

The officials were confused. None of them knew what the king just saw, and why he wanted to retreat just like that. However, nobody dared to ask anything. They just followed orders.

Somebody was ordered to collect the body of Second Prince. All the departed arms and legs, flesh and blood, they picked them all up and tried so hard to stick them together and make a complete body shape...

However, it was an impossible mission!

It was already merciful to let him die so fast. He would never be left a whole body!

...

In the Royal House!

- Bang! -

The King heavily slapped on the desk!

The white jade desk that had been used by the king for many years was smashed into pieces!

The king's face looked green as his body trembled. His eyes were

opened wide like copper bells.

He had finished reading that scroll!

The more he read, the more furious he was! When he read to the half of it, he was already raging up in anger!

He was, after all, a tough man. He endured the anger and kept it till the entire scroll was finished!

When he finished it, fire of anger filled his chest. He smashed the jade desk with one strike in an attempt to vent all his anger. Royal Consort Hua, who was weeping and shaking beside him, was terrified. She looked up to him, slightly opened her mouth, but didn't know what to say.

She was exactly Second Prince's mother.

The King had comforted her for a long time earlier, but now he didn't even look at her. He just thought and pushed away the scroll. He shouted, "Make a copy of it! Dig deep to the truth!"

"Yes, my king." A eunuch hurriedly walked over and took the scroll before he left the room, with his head lowered.

"Hua, go back to rest now!" The king closed his eyes and coldly spoke, "Let's talk when I figure out the truth."

"Your majesty, my son died in such a brutal way, I..." Royal Consort Hua was still weeping.

"Get the fxck off!"

The king shouted in anger. He suddenly raged up like a madman. He stood up and pushed everything to the floor. Things were broken on the floor, including the Royal Jade Ruyi that he loved the most!

Hua was shocked. She trembled even more and didn't dare to say a word!

The eunuchs and maids held her with their hands to help her leave.

The king stayed in the study room, trembling, his eyes burning with anger.

In fact, the king knew that he didn't need to dig any deeper on this. He knew that all of it was true!

Nobody would fake such things!

Who would spend so much time and money to frame a prince and wipe out his entire family? That was absurd in the Land of Han-Yang!

It would be such a joke to frame a prince like this!

...

Within one night.

Killing qi raged up in the city!

Smell of blood filled half of the capital!

Hundreds of miles around the Chen-Xing City, all branches of Voluptuous Flower Building were ruined! Staff were all dead... in unusual ways.

Some of them even got their entire clans wiped out.

However, even though there were full of dead bodies and blood in those places, all things remained untouched, not like the two inside the Chen-Xing City!

The books and secret papers that should have been hidden deep under the floor were placed on the table in the main hall.

The secret records showed how Voluptuous Flower Building did their dirty business...

The brothel kept ten percent of the money they got as daily

expenses. The rest of it went to other places, and these places were clearly recorded on those secret papers.

The money would go to many people. These people were dead at the moment, but their account books were shown on the table.

It proved where the money came and where it went to...

After many times of transfer... the money all went to Second Prince's Palace!

The money flowed in a complex way, and it was such a perfect plan to transfer the money. To check one point in the flow would lead to nothing. It was nearly impossible to find out the money actually went to the Second Prince's Palace at the end!

Only when everything was dug out and people started to check the money from Second Prince's Palace was the truth revealed!

Over twenty thousand people died within this night!

The revealed crime shocked the entire kingdom.

The wave of killing didn't end after all. It was actually just the start. It began within the capital of Kingdom of Chen and spread out to the entire kingdom... Everywhere there was a branch of Voluptuous Flower Building...

One after another, they were wiped out. Even those who knew people were targeting them, even though they hid away in advance, they would be dragged out and slaughtered, along with their entire family!

It was like a mad autumn wind, rolling over and blowing down the entire forest!

Nobody could escape the justice.

Even Second Prince and Hua Liushui, such powerful men, were captured and slaughtered, so how could those small figures escape from the punishment!

Apparently, Ye Xiao had shown his attitude. [I have informed you, the government, the royal house... But I just don't trust you!]

[Evil must be wiped out!]

[We will do it with our own hands!]

[We will send these evil monsters to hell by ourselves!]

[Who knows how long I will wait before you finish the investigation and claim them guilty! We don't wait!]

[The million dead souls of the young women won't wait!]

[The justice for all the people in the world can't wait!]

[We will just do it!]

...

In the royal court.

The king was trembling. He wept, "I... I am ashamed! I am sorry, my ancestors! My people! I am so sorry! ..."

"My son was such a monster! My son didn't have a conscience! So unscrupulous..." He shouted to the sky, "It is such a misfortune to the Kingdom of Chen! Such a shame to the royal clan! Such a grief for my people! It won't clean his guilt even if he were cut into pieces!"

The officials were silent. None of them said anything. They just lowered their heads and stood still.

Usually, they would gather forward and comfort the King.

‘Please, your majesty, you should take care of yourself... Second Prince must have been framed by his men...’

They would say something like that.

They would say anything as an excuse to comfort the king and exonerate Second Prince.

However, under such a world-shocking, lurid, unbelievable, and unforgivable crime, they couldn't say anything anymore.

...

Chapter 551: What about Your Clan?

How to comfort the king on this? How to exonerate his son?

Regardless of their own moral consciousness, to comfort the king and exonerate Second Prince was the dumbest thing to do!

What if somebody suspected that any of them were related to Second Prince's dirty business? That would be such a nasty trouble!

The king had been thinking for a while. At the end, he decided not to hide the truth!

The royal house didn't need the fig leaf anymore!

He could never hide it forever anyway. Besides, he couldn't bear the censure from his morality.

...

Three days killings, the assassins had travelled around half of the Kingdom of Chen already.

They covertly and quickly acted. They would only spend half a day to travel to another place, while normal people would spend one full day on horse.

They started the killing right at the moment they arrived!

They didn't even need time to recover themselves!

Within five days and four nights without rest, they had killed over a hundred thousand men, including officials, royal relatives, noble born, and citizens. Most of the people in the local Voluptuous Flower Building were citizens, at least as recorded...

Such crazy massacre was almost against the nature's rules. The king couldn't say anything about it though. [Capture them? How? What reason do I have? How can I be so shameless to stop them?]

[My son did so many evil and unforgivable crimes and did I capture him?]

[Did I sentence him to any thing by now?]

[Now that somebody is doing the justice that I should have done long ago, how can I go stop them?]

[People born in the royalty shouldn't be so shameless!]

Besides, the royal court had been working on collecting information about the crime. They had put together all the papers from all the Voluptuous Flower Buildings in the kingdom...

The king compelled all officials in Penalty Ministry to analyze the

information. They spent a full day to sort all things out.

The Minister of Penalty Ministry was gasping with a red face as he lowered his head. He couldn't say a word at all.

If the responsible person wasn't the king's son, the minister would have long shouted abuse to him and swore to fxck his entire clan!

What kind of animal would do such a filthy thing!

"Wang, you haven't given me the result yet," the king spoke.

"Your majesty!" Minister Wang sounded tough, "In ten years, Voluptuous Flower Building has built eighty-five branches at appearance, thirty-three in secret, eleven in the Kingdom of Tian-Yu and nine in the Kingdom of Lan-Feng... That is one hundred and thirty-eight in total!"

"In ten years, on record... the number... of the women that were murdered... is one million and two hundred and seventy thousand!" Minister Wang's voice became keyed-up and thrilled. "One million and two hundred seventy thousand... young women! One million and two hundred and seventy thousand deaths!"

He shouted so loudly in the royal court.

There were tears on his face!

The king closed his eyes with sorrow and shame.

"That is as shown on record. There must be many girls who have been sent to some important figures in the court as gifts..." Minister Wang's eyes lit up. He glanced at the officials on the court and said, "I wonder how many..."

Officials were all sighing, except two of them. They were both trying to avoid eye contacts.

They didn't participate in the filthy business of Second Prince, but they accepted the girls from him. They still kept the girls... at home...

Minister Wang looked at them and said, "My dear friends, what do you two think about it?"

The two of them were terrified. They hurriedly kneeled down and kowtowed, begging, "Your majesty... Please... I was wrong... I deserve penalty..."

The king looked at them in disdain. He had praised these two officials many times for their hard work in their jobs before, but now he said to them, "Since you know you deserve it, fine. Somebody come and drag them out. Kill them both!"

"Wipe out their families and kill their clans!"

As the king gave such an order, the two officials suddenly broke down.

The guards in the court gathered over and grabbed them both, then they dragged them out like dragging two dead dogs. They begged and begged, feeling extreme desperation as they got nearer to the gate.

One of them suddenly shouted, "Kill my clan! Good! Can I ask you something, your majesty! I just accepted one woman and I have never harmed her ever! Am I that unforgivable? If you insist to wipe out my entire clan, what about you? Your son had done such a flagrant crime!"

"King obeys to law like all citizen! Second Prince did so many flagrant things. Should you wipe out his clan too? Should you dig out his ancestors' tombs? Your son committed such a crime, don't you, as his father, have any responsibility for it? Even if you kill all the officials here, can you cover the truth that such a crime was on your royal family?"

"Hahahaha... Wipe out my clan! Good! I know I am unforgivable! I will go to hell and wait till the moment you put the order to wipe out your own clan! I want to see how you wipe out your own clan yourself and convince the entire world!"

The two of them knew they were bound to die this day, so they decided to go straightforward on it. They feared nothing now.

They just said whatever they had in their mind!

In fact, they were right. They were not even part of Second Prince's men. What they did was just misprision. They accepted the girls from Second Prince, and it was just following the unspoken rule in the court. Besides, they liked the girls so much and had never harmed them. They didn't know where Second Prince got them either...

It was a special time and the king was lost in anger, that was why they got such a serious penalty. In fact, they should be just warned and suspended from duty for some time. Normally, they wouldn't get punished like this—execution and clan extermination should have been out of the question!

The hall was in silence all of a sudden.

The king's face was twisting.

In his eyes, there were depression, gloom, anger, guilt, remorse...

The angry shout of the two officials before death resounded in his ears like sharp needles stabbing deep into his heart!

[Are they right?]

[Aren't they right?]

[But... I... What should I do?]

The king was having complex emotions in his heart. Eventually, he sighed and said, "Bring them back. Suspension for half a year. Let's see how they behave after half a year."

His eyes looked so gloomy. "They're right. My son made such an unforgivable crime. I can't vent my anger to people with such an unreasonable excuse."

...

Chapter 552: Rectification in the Kingdom

The two officials who had been dragged out the door were dragged back now. They were pleasantly surprised when they heard the king. They couldn't believe their ears.

It was the first time in all those years that the king took back what he decreed himself.

"You two... go back and treat the girls well." The king spoke in a deep voice, "You are right. This time, I... can not escape the guilt! When the case is thoroughly sorted out, I... will admit my fault to all people and exempt all tax for five years. I will make up for the families who suffered a loss. I will do the most... that I can do!"

Officials were all driven to tears. They all kneeled and said, "Long live the king!"

No matter what he does, he could never truly make up for those poor families, as they had suffered the pain of losing their beloved ones. He could never make up for those who had already died... However, the king confessed his fault after all.

That was enough.

There was no other way to deal with this after all...

"Minister Wang, please go on," the king spoke in a deep voice.

"The Voluptuous Flower Building has made a great wealth by exploiting those poor women. The number is... sixty-three billion! Silver!"

When Minister Wang said the number, he was shaking. He spoke in a deep voice, "By now, the money is still missing..."

Officials were all stunned!

[Oh my almighty heavens! So much money!]

The monster exploited the women and got so much money. It was not difficult to imagine what happened to those poor women...

"We should make a law about this! We should put this case in the record. Every person in the Kingdom of Chen should remember it!"

The king's voice reverberated.

"It is the biggest disgrace of the Kingdom of Chen since my ancestor built this kingdom! It is the biggest shame! The one to blame is exactly my own son... I, as his father, can not absolve myself from the blame!"

"..."

"A monument of shame should be built in the royal house. Here I decree! Every king, prince, and princess in the Kingdom of Chen

from now on should learn and remember this monument! We should read it loud every once a month! Whoever dares to commit such a crime again should be cut into pieces till death! No mercy!"

"Second Prince was unscrupulous and unforgivable. I decree that he is no longer a member of the royal family, no longer a prince. He is from now on a sinner in the history of the Kingdom of Chen. His body should be thrown to the wild. He is an animal..."

The king didn't finish the decree, however. He was gasping, and his face had turned red. His eyes showed that he was extremely furious at the moment.

Suddenly, after a gasp, he spat out blood.

- Puff! -

It all became red around the throne!

"Your majesty!"

Officials exclaimed.

"I am fine!" The king was gasping. He raised his head up and showed his gloomy eyes. "I am just angry about that animal son. I feel much better now as the blood is out..."

"Since I sat on this throne, I have been wishing peace and

happiness for the kingdom and my people. I want my kingdom to be a land of joy. I never knew... that my son actually did such filthy things. I cannot imagine how many lives he ruined and how many places he destroyed. He should bear the anger from men and heavens. He is unforgivable. I am a king and a father. I have responsibility on this. I am also unforgivable. I decree, that it is my unforgivable fault. I shall warn all the kings to come after me that the kingdom is important, but the people living in it is the most important. The throne is the least. All the young generations and the generations to come in the future in my clan should never forget the words I am saying today. I want everybody to remember the pain that we suffered today! We should never forget it!"

"Whoever ignores this, may heavens show justice and abandon him!"

"Other than that, the assassins who have been killing around recently are holding justice for the heavens. They are sharing the burdens for the kingdom and saving people from misery..." The King sighed. "As long as they only target people who participated in the case of Voluptuous Flower Building... I remit them from punishment. Local governments should never stand on their way and stop them. Never ever fight against them!"

He announced two decrees. First decree, he admitted his own fault and tried to make up for the people. That was reasonable and understandable. However, the second decree was such a shock to the officials. He actually connived on the assassins' crime! That was something that had never happened in history.

Somebody was killing inside the kingdom. Over a hundred

thousand had already been killed by then, and they were still killing more. The king actually announce a decree to allow them! These murderers were not guilty!

[What... What the hell?]

Nobody dared to stand out and make an objection to it. If they objected it, they were against the people. If they objected it, people might suspect that they were also related to Second Prince in that business. All in all, they decided to shut up!

The officials of the Ministry of Rites were troubled. They were the ones who wrote the decree on papers. The king's words were too frank, and they shouldn't write it down word by word as he said. Otherwise, the royal court would disappoint the world.

They had to change it in a way to express the king's intention.

"The entire kingdom should work together to strike the evil Voluptuous Flower Building! Make a conviction! Strict disposal! Dig out the truth! I will never allow any unscrupulous criminal to slip through the cracks!"

"From now on, in the Kingdom of Chen, all brothels..." The king suddenly stopped when he reached this point.

Officials looked up in a panic.

They looked at the king.

[He is not going to shut down all the brothels in the kingdom, is he?]

[Because your son did such a filthy thing so you are going to shut down all the brothels in the kingdom?]

[That will lead to a national disaster...]

Brothels were never elegant places in the world. However, they were essential leisure places... It concerned the profits of many influential figures... If brothels were all shut down, then rebellion would very likely roll over the entire kingdom... They would be all noble borns and rich figures!

At least... Some women would seem to be saved, but in fact they would have nowhere to go. They would starve to death...

Because of the wars, all kingdoms had low ratios of men to women. Less than twenty-five percent of the population was male... And women were physically weak...

"Brothels in the kingdom... should all be investigated. Whoever forces girls to prostitute or traffic in persons..." The king apparently had thought much about it too. He hesitated and said in a low voice, "Should be cut into pieces till death and suffer clan extermination!"

"Besides, no Discipline Supervisor is allowed in the Kingdom of

Chen from now on! All Discipline Supervisors should die with dismembering! Catch them now and kill them right away! Minister Li, you and your Ministry of Penalty are in charge of this. If you miss any one of those pricks, I will take the lives of your family to make up!"

The king's decree was full of vigor and killing qi!

...

Chapter 553: Reward Warrant

Minister Li solemnly stepped forward. "If we missed any guilty man, I will be ashamed to face you again, your majesty!"

That meant he was making a pledge here. He was obviously fully obedient to the decree.

The king nodded, his eyes full of coldness. Apparently, he was determined to sweep out all the brothels in the world with his own hands!

What he did currently was just the first step!

Where there was prostitute, there was a whoremaster. However, when either of them was swept, the other would disappear very soon...

Evil in the world was mostly because of prostitution!

However, if the king wanted to do it in the world, he would have to do one thing first—rule the world!

Even if all brothels in Kingdom of Chen were banned, there would still be countless brothels in other kingdoms. That would only lead to the weakening of the Kingdom of Chen!

The king was raging in fury in the royal house.

...

Ling-Bao Hall was empty at the moment. All assassins were sent out on missions. Half of them directly rushed to Kingdom of Lan-Feng and Kingdom of Tian-Yu.

They were on the missions to wipe out all Voluptuous Flower Building!

Surely, they were always ready for further commands...

Honestly, Second Prince was a genius in running the entertainment business. He was actually so horribly good at it. It must have been so hard to hide his true personality as a prince after opening over a hundred brothels all around the world.

If he devoted his capability and the brothels to serve the kingdom, he would be much more powerful in fighting for the throne. Brothels had the most information than any other places after all. There were always secrets to be revealed in the brothels. However, he had only used it for money. That was such a waste!

Even though Second Prince wanted to gather information for the kingdom, Hua Liushui might not be happy about it. What he wanted were only virgins. He didn't even like money that much. Information and all that stuff meant nothing to him at all!

What happened to them were their own faults. It was not

destiny! It was purely their fault!

Ye Xiao had massacred a huge amount this time.

The qi of morbid hostility had been dissipated by the killing. Bing-Er had taken part in a few battles too.

She asked for it herself. Ye Xiao found that once Bing-Er was fighting, she was merciless. No matter how those men begged, the girl never turned soft at all.

Her attacks were always sharp and quick, extremely vicious!

After a few fights, she seemed ready to make another breakthrough in cultivation. She was nearly level five of the Earth Origin Stage now.

Ye Xiao was surprised and unhappy at the same time.

[She is improving so much faster than I am. If I am beyond human nature, what about her? Beyond heavens maybe...]

Boss Wan had gotten the reward warrants ready for days, but Feng Monarch suddenly went crazy, so the plan was delayed four days!

If the assassins in the martial world weren't afraid of Feng Monarch's fierceness, they would have already made many

troubles.

Within a few days, the Boundless Saint had asked personally twice about the warrants. He only left when he was told the exact time.

On the fifth day, reward warrants of Ling-Bao Hall finally came to the martial world!

The news shocked the entire Land of Han-Yang! The whole world was thrilled!

After Voluptuous Flower Building was wiped out, Ling-Bao Hall's warrants spread to the world!

The price reached five hundred billion!

The made most of the assassins feel dizzy when they heard about the number!

Money could drive a ghost to grind the mill, but such an amount of money could even make the mill grind the ghosts!

Money didn't mean everything, however, what could possibly go wrong with such an amount of money?

That was crazy!

The title on the warrants was: "Five Hundred Billion Silver; A tooth for a tooth, an eye for an eye!"

There was a list with lots of names on it!

From the royal houses of the two kingdoms in the world to the noble born houses who had given money for Feng Monarch's death!

There were seven thousand and eight hundred men in total!

It was not a small number concerning they were people. However, compared to the popularity of the two kingdoms and the price it offered on the reward warrants, it was a tiny number!

Every name had a specific price.

The lowest price among these names was five million silver! The highest was three hundred million!

Ling-Bao Hall had gone mad. People in martial world all agreed to this.

However, everybody knew that Ling-Bao Hall would never break their words! Wan Zhenghao had lived in this world for centuries. He would never ruin the reputation of Ling-Bao Hall for just that amount of money!

The martial world was boiling for it!

Assassins, well known or not, all got on with it!

Some of them were young and weak, and some of them were superior masters who had been hiding for many years!

Each amount was enough for anybody to retire!

They all needed to do it quick. Ling-Bao Hall didn't prescribe a limit to the cultivation levels. Whoever killed the men on the list would receive the corresponding reward. There were some influential figures on the list who were difficult to kill, but some of them were easy like pieces of cakes. Everybody wanted to get the money as it was such an easy job!

"Let's make a fortune!"

"Wow! How generous... I just need to kill one among the people on the list, and I can retire from this rubbish business and never put my life in risk anymore..."

...

Chapter 554: City of Peace

"That is true. I want to earn more..."

"I will kill as many as I can. There are plenty of easy targets on the list anyway. Those are so easy..."

"Those are mine! Who dares to snatch, I will kill him!"

"B*llshit! They are mine! You are stronger than me. Why don't you go pick someone with a higher bounty..."

"I will go too. The fastest gets the bounty! Strong or weak, easy or tough..."

"I just saw it... What the hell. That is a bunch of gold mountains falling down from the sky... I can't believe it..."

"Relax, Ling-Bao Hall is a huge business. They won't back down on such a small amount!"

"I agree."

"That's right. Feng Monarch can make supreme dan. Even if they spend all their savings for this, as long as he wants to make money, he will make it back instantly. Money really doesn't matter in his perspective..."

"What a dream to me. Well, as long as I can solve some of the names, I will be a dream to others!"

"That's right... Whoever has that wealth should better have great capability... I just want to chop the head off the man who's worth three hundred million. That will be damn enough for me. That is not so greedy, right..."

"What... That is not greedy for you?"

"The entire martial world wants that guy's head. Do you really think it will turn to you? Who do you think you are? Ning Biluo or Zhao Pingtian?"

"Humph..."

Assassins from Boundless Lake had retreated from the capital before Ling-Bao Hall put on the warrants. They had rented the best horses on the way to the other two big kingdoms!

When the warrants were out, these men would get on the way immediately to the two kingdoms. They wouldn't rest. They just wanted to complete the tasks as soon as possible.

When Boundless Saint got the warrants, he immediately rode on the horse and left. While he was riding the horse, he kept giving out orders to his men.

"Send a hawk to deliver the messages to the golden table assassins

inside the two kingdoms. Tell them to kill the easy ones first. Now!"

"Kill as many as we can in the shortest time!"

"There will be no other opportunity like this in the future!"

"The six of us shall separate into two groups. One to the Kingdom of Tian-Yu, while the other to Kingdom of Lan-Feng!"

"Hurry!"

"Five hundred fxcking billion! It is impossible to get it all, but... two hundred billion is not that difficult for us. That is enough for us to do so many things already..." Boundless Saint kept talking.

The six superior assassins moved so fast on their horses. He had set the plan. They didn't slow down even a bit. When they were about to reach a mountain, they shouted and then divided into two groups!

Each of them led three horses. Six of them had eighteen horses. They were like two sharp swords moving towards the west and the east.

They disappeared in the dust soon after.

Five hundred billion!

It motivated all assassins in the world. They were all thrilled.

Chen-Xing City had been full of people in the past few days, yet within a single day, ten percent of the houses became empty! Assassins ran off the city to their targets like crazy.

First of all, Chen-Xing City was too dangerous for them. There were fights, murders, and searching armies everyday. They might get revealed someday and die in the military's hands...

They just couldn't feel safe here.

Second... The bounty was huge... They could never kill Feng Monarch of Ling-Bao Hall for sure. They even felt scared only thinking about him. They had come a long way, but all for nothing. However, they were still alive. That was lucky enough for them now...

However, they had spent a lot in this failed mission. They had to make it up... The reward warrant was their opportunity...

It was such a great opportunity.

[I am too weak to kill Feng Monarch of Ling-Bao Hall. Fine. Am I capable enough to kill those foppish stupid noble trash in the two kingdoms?]

[Even though I may not be able to kill the ones with the highest prices, can't I kill the cheapest ones?]

The bounty this time was not quite the same with the one on Feng Monarch. Feng Monarch was horribly capable, and his capability suited the price that was put on his head. However, the price of the heads of those men in the two kingdoms were unreasonably high. None of those men were good in cultivation!

That was such an easy money to get for these assassins. They just couldn't hold the eagerness to kill them.

All assassins left Chen-Xing City at once when they heard the reward. Chen-Xing City was now... absolutely safe! Absolutely no troubles! Absolutely no assassins! Absolutely in peace!

For the entire year to come, not even one assassin showed up in Chen-Xing City! That created a history!

Surely, some of the assassins killed their targets and returned to Chen-Xing City for the bounty. Wan Zhenghao didn't want that to happen, so he announced that the bounty could be cashed in any branch of Ling-Bao Hall in the Land of Han-Yang. They didn't need to return to Chen-Xing City anymore. That was supported by all assassins. Ling-Bao Hall gave too much for the bounty, and that brought risks for the assassins who returned for the money. Since Wan Zhenghao announced the new service, it lowered the danger for the assassins. That was a story that should be told later after all!

All in all, Chen-Xing City was in a historically peaceful time.

First, lots of people died in the huge disturbance. Second, Feng Monarch's assassins swept the Voluptuous Flower Buildings and which caused the deaths of more people. Now, nearly half a million assassins left the city within one day...

Chen-Xing City had always been busy, yet now it became a bit desolate...

Nearly two million people died in or left the city within a few days!

Chen-Xing City was the capital of the Kingdom of Chen. The population was less than fifty million!

The men who died or left were the most vibrant ones.

For the coming period of time, Chen-Xing City was in a perfect public security situation. No one picked up or pocketed anything lost on the road, and people didn't need to lock the doors at night. It was absolutely a city of peace!

...

Chapter 555: Speechless

Ye Xiao was being questioned by Song Jue these days!

"How did you get such big progress!"

"You cured me! You..."

"Where did you get so many assassins? Did you do anything stupid?"

"What is going on?"

"Say it! Tell me!..."

Ye Xiao was so troubled being questioned by his Uncle Steward.

He had told Song Jue too much when he was affected by anger. Now, he didn't what to deal with Song Jue's inquests. That was embarrassing.

"Well urh... Before... that... That is urh..."

"It is because... something..."

"I was just... that... ya..."

Song Jue was speechless. [What? What are you talking about?]

Ye Xiao fled away stealthily...

"You wait and see, kid! You will be back in my hands again!" Song Jue was angry.

...

The next few days were such happy time for Ye Xiao. He just stayed with Bing-Er, having little talks and practicing martial arts, hand in hand, kissing on the face, touching... Ahem...

During the days, after Wan Zhenghao put on the warrants, he was ready to pay the assassins. At the same time, he was preparing for the next auction.

Feng Monarch said to him that the next auction, they were going to get back half of the money they were spending on the bounty!

In other words, they were going to earn at least two hundred and fifty million in the next auction!

Boss Wan was thrilled and motivated by it! He had spent too much after all!

Besides, Feng Monarch told him that after the next auction, he would have the Weight Losing Dan he wanted!

Boss Wan cried his eyes out when he heard that.

[Finally!]

In fact, Ye Xiao had Weight Losing Dan already, in supreme level...

Brother Egg absorbed everything including the medical materials in the Wood Space, treasures from the last auction, materials from Master Bai, and medicines from Lord Ling. It gathered everything together and made a variety of supreme dan beads. There were all kinds of dan beads in the Space right now.

There was Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan and also Weight Losing Dan.

However, it was not a peaceful time. Boss Wan needed a fat body... If he suddenly became fit shaped, people wouldn't believe he was the Boss Wan of Ling-Bao Hall!

'That is Boss Wan?'

'Impossible!'

'No way that is him!'

...

That would be a trouble for Ling-Bao Hall after all. Even little troubles should be avoided at this time...

During the past few days, Ye Xiao not only cared about things in Ling-Bao Hall, but also paid special attention to the frontline in the battle.

Several weird things happened that changed the result of the war during the year.

They were weird, because nobody did those things.

It was the heaven's will!

Well, different people had different views on that. For ordinary people, those were absolutely things that only gods could do. Otherwise, it would be too unimaginable!

The first weird thing was the most unimaginable. The battle was on fever and Kingdom of Chen was losing it. Suddenly, a mountain fell down and blocked the way the enemy marched on. The two kingdoms were totally freaking out for that...

The second weird thing was more acceptable. It was a rainstorm that saved the army of the Kingdom of Chen in a losing fight on the east and the west both...

That also freaked the enemies out.

On the Kingdom of Chen's side, Ye Nantian, the great general wasn't happy about that rainstorm either.

The rainstorm ruined his chance to completely wipe out the Grassland Wolf, which he had been planning for a long time.

The third thing was also unexpected and unreasonable.

Prince Hua-Yang, Su Dingguo, had retreated from the south battle and marched to the east battle. The general of the enemy in the east Zhan Qianshan knew that if Su Dingguo arrived, it would become a tough war.

He had to destroy the Kingdom of Chen's army before Su Dingguo arrived!

So even if Su Dingguo arrived, he would have no army to command anymore!

Zhan Qianshan kept attacking from day to night. They never rest. Through continuous attacks, many people died...

The east troop of the Kingdom of Chen knew that Prince Hua-Yang was arriving, however, under the crazy attacks of the War God Zhan Qianshan, they were giving up on it... When they were so close to be defeated...

- Splash... -

Another rainstorm!

It was a rainstorm that covered the entire Land of Han-Yang!

It turned Zhan Qianshan's barracks into an ocean. The army was divided to dozens of groups that stayed up in different mountains, like dozens of islands.

How to win such a battle?

Normal soldiers could drown to death if they were careless, not to mention crossing the water to kill people a hundred miles away...

Zhan Qianshan was shocked by the two rainstorms. He spat out blood and then lied on the bed with illness!

What a coincidence.

One rainstorm after another, the gods were helping the Kingdom of Chen...

Was the Kingdom of Chen blessed by the heavens?

"Heavens..." War God Zhan Qianshan, who had never believed that was gods and ghosts shouted to the sky. He looked so bad.

That was such a prank from heavens on him!

His old opponent, Prince Hua-Yang Su Dingguo, had been marching day and night, but when they were three hundred miles away from the battle, they couldn't move any further. They needed rest. Even if they forcibly went to the battle, they couldn't provide any help. In other words, they had to rest or else they could only see the enemy win!

However, the rainstorm changed everything!

When the rainstorm was over and the flood was gone, Zhan Qianshan could still attack but Prince Hua-Yang would be waiting for him. After a few days rest, Prince Hua-Yang's people were all in good status. Zhan Qianshan would have to face Prince Hua-Yang and his Iron Troops!

That was totally a different army.

...

Chapter 556: Debtor Drops In!

The west battle and the north battle were in the same situation.

However, it wasn't a good thing for the Kingdom of Chen in the north though.

When the rainstorm fell on the land, Ye Nantian looked at the sky with a bitter smile.

Several generals beside him were all helpless. They had been planning so well on this. Such a great opportunity to wipe out the Grassland Wolf, yet the rainstorm ruined everything...

They had been following General Ye for many years, and they had never heard any dirty words from his mouth. However, at this day, they clearly heard a subtle voice from him.

"Motherfxcker!"

The generals looked at each other. They were gloomy, but what he just said made them so want to laugh out loud.

After all, Ye Nantian must be really upset since he had said such a word.

Nobody dared to really laugh though!

It would absolutely lead to a miserable ending if any of them dared to laugh at this particular moment!

...

In the several days, Wan of the Clouds visited Ling-Bao Hall once, looking for Feng Monarch. Feng Monarch, on the other hand, was staying with the little girl at home. He was not in the Ling-Bao Hall. The next day, Xiu of the Heavens went for him, but he wasn't there either.

The third day, Lord Ling, Ling Wuxie went himself...

Feng Monarch was right there at last.

Lord Ling felt relieved. "Look! Good personality leads to good luck! Truth is that I am so much better person than the two girls! At least they are way beneath my league!"

Wan of the Clouds and Xiu of the Heavens were both speechless...

[What the hell does this have to do with personality?]

[He wasn't here when we came and he is here when you are here now... So what...]

[Just as simple as that!]

[Do you have to brag on this too?]

[Is he really Master's good friend? I just can't imagine how Master gets along with this guy!]

"Well Lord Ling, you... What happened to you?" When Ye Xiao saw Ling Wuxie, he was shocked.

Lord Ling was bearing a swollen face, two dark eyes, limping, and his two arms seemed pointed at the wrong direction...

He just looked like he had been beaten up hard!

He looked pretty seriously injured...

Ye Xiao was shocked by what he saw really.

The truth was that, Ye Xiao understood somebody would want to beat Ling Wuxie up. He was so annoying after all. The question was...

In the Land of Han-Yang, who could beat Ling Wuxie up like that? If there was really someone that powerful... that person must be strong enough to sweep out the entire Land of Han-Yang!

Ling Wuxie was seriously injured, yet the world was still fine.

There was no earthquake, no tsunami, no landslide, no drained sea... That was abnormal!

Ling Wuxie was troubled. He didn't know how to answer Ye Xiao.

He stopped bragging.

He sighed. He knew that there would be a reverse divine punishment striking on him once he went on reaching for Heaven's Secrets. He didn't know it would be so serious though. He was now unable to freely move, and his face was swollen with colorful wounds. He was not sure if he could fully recover even when he was back to Human Realm Upon Heavens!

The divine punishment was not easy to remove!

"Long story." Ling Wuxie sighed.

"Who did this?" Ye Xiao was curious. "How come I don't know any man in this world who can do this to you..."

Ling Wuxie was speechless and embarrassed. "Stop guessing around. I was not beaten by anybody..."

Ye Xiao looked enlightened. "Oh... So you beat up yourself so hard? No wonder... I never know you have such a hobby though. Hard to tell... Strange person, weird thing. Unique and special. What a surprise!"

The two ladies burst into laughters, holding their bellies. They realized how good Feng Monarch was at making jokes... Ling Wuxie must be so crazy to beat up himself like this.

A masochist?

"Let me just be frank. I was stricken by lightning..." Ling Wuxie said the truth embarrassedly.

He didn't want to, because... there were many people who were able to beat him up like this though.

However, to be stricken by lightning...

He had been bragging in front of Feng Monarch that he didn't fear lightnings. He had said that he saw people fighting against lightnings everyday... He said that lightning was nothing to him at all...

And now he had been stricken by lightning and ended up with such a stupid look!

What could he say more?

Feng Monarch apparently forgot about how Ling Wuxie bragged a few days earlier. He nodded and showed a calmer expression. He said, "That's alright. People who have done bad things a lot usually

suffer such things. Brother Ling, don't be upset. In my opinion, this is just a normal thing. Very normal. Nothing special."

He then sighed, "So people shouldn't do bad things really. Heavens are always watching. People says that the gods have left justice behind. Nonsense. They should have a look at you, Brother Ling. Look how you got stricken by lightnings!"

Ling Wuxie was speechless. He opened his mouth and tried to say something, but he couldn't find a word to say. He just stared at Ye Xiao directly.

[Why... What... How can you be so sure that I got stricken because I did bad things?]

[Isn't it... too opinionated?]

[I ended up like this because I risked my life to help my friend... That's how...]

[We should be friends now, why do you talk like that to your friend?]

[That was so embarrassing!]

"It was the lightning of Heaven's Secret..." Lord Ling tried to explain.

"Hmmm. Lightning of heavens chicken. Alright. Chicken from the sky. They strike lightning? That opened my eyes today..." Ye Xiao said.

Ling Wuxie lowered his head and decided to shut up.

Wan-Er and Xiu-Er laughed so hard.

Feng Monarch was doing this intentionally. That was obvious.

However, they felt good to see Ling Wuxie got embarrassed after all...

"Brother Feng... My appearance... That is my personal problem. Let's not discuss it further. It really is not important." Ling Wuxie tried to spirit up. He decided to cut the useless chatter and went straight to business. "In fact, I am here today to ask... that... What about the Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan? Do we have any progress now?"

...

Chapter 557: Tantalization!

After the question, Ling, Wan and Xiu were all staring at Ye Xiao with fever in their eyes, like there was a flower on his face.

That was such an important question after all.

"Ah!" Ye Xiao sighed before he talked. He looked gloomy.

"What is it?" The three of them all felt intense.

[Why did he sigh? Anything went wrong? Is it bad?]

"Progress..." Ye Xiao looked troubled.

"Damn it! How is it?" Ling Wuxie asked.

[Damn it! Please don't tell me there has been nothing in progress! It is not the same now! We have limited time here. Only half a year. We were in a hurry before, but we still had time. Now, everyday counts! You need to make fifty Heaven Seizing Dan beads in half a year. There is really not much time left...]

"It is so difficult to make those dan beads." Ye Xiao sighed. "I followed everything my master taught me. I have studied so hard on those books and scrolls, and I am confident that all dan beads are in my heart. I am..."

He kept going on with tens of thousand words. This and that, here and there, bla bla bla... Ling Wuxie was blank. Wan-Er and Xiu-Er were speechless.

They listened to him speak for an hour, yet there was nothing about the Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan.

The only thing they got from the long speech was that it was so difficult to make those dan beads!

Besides, Feng Monarch was still speaking. Apparently, he was so into it. He didn't want to stop at all.

"The dan..." Ling Wuxie tried to interrupt.

"Can you please be patient? Do you know that the last thing we should do is to hurry while we want to make dan beads? I am getting to it very soon! Patience please!" Ye Xiao stared at him angrily. Apparently, he was annoyed about being interrupted.

Ling Wuxie didn't know what to say.

He tried to endure it, but he couldn't help thinking, [God damn it, you bastard! I don't make dan beads! Normal people do hurry when things are in a hurry!]

[Are you fooling me by your dan making skills? Wait and see you asshole! When you finish those dan beads... Hmmm. Damn it. I will still not do anything on him. He is the only dan master in tens

of thousands of years. Maybe we will need him again in the future... I will have to bear it! Damn it!]

"The one thousand portions of material Master Bai gave me were excellent. I like that. Good quality. After three hundred times of testing, I finally figured out the relationships among those materials. After another three hundred times, I learned all the conflicting influences between one and another material. After the last three hundred times, I know how to merge the medical materials in a proper way..."

Ye Xiao said.

Ling Wuxie, Wan-Er and Xiu-Er all showed pale faces. They looked quite annoyed. It was obvious.

[Bloody hell... And nine hundred portions were finished just like that?]

[Become trash?]

[There are one thousand in total! Can you please not waste it like that?]

"After that, I should naturally start to try making the dan beads. As expected, the first stove failed. The second failed too. The third..." Ye Xiao went on and on counting numbers.

Ling Wuxie was having a headache now. "Please just tell us when

you succeeded!"

Ye Xiao humphed. "It is always suffering to talk to people like you. If Master Bai was here, he wouldn't say that for sure. How obvious is the difference between one and another!? Don't you know how hard it is to make supreme dan beads? Do you know, that to make dan beads, I need to firstly... secondly... thirdly... fourthly... bla bla bla bla..."

"Okay... Okay... I was wrong... My fault... I was wrong... I apologize..." Ling Wuxie raised his hands up and lowered his head, tears almost flowing out from his eyes.

[I shouldn't have said that at all. I directly started a machine gun of words in his mouth. And I have to bear his lessons.]

[Why did you have to compare me to Bai Chen? I am laical and he is not? What do you mean difference between one and another! Can't you just say I am so much worse than Bai Chen!]

[For fxck's sake, what have I done to suffer this!]

[Why am I such a good friend to Bai Chen and why did I mess with this prick for him?]

[My god. Please just strike me with a lightning and kill me!]

"The one thousand portions of medical materials... At the end..." Wan-Er felt difficult to speak too. She wanted to say something but

didn't dare to.

Ye Xiao sighed and acted like there had never been good news!

The three of them felt bad about it, and they looked at each other.

[So all ruined. We got nothing out from it.]

[Oh. That is reasonable anyway. Heaven Seizing Dan is never something easy to produce.]

[If it is, how come there has only been one bead in the history!]

"That's alright. We will find more materials. Feng Monarch, please do not lose the will. You have been in the dan-making procedure already. That is a great progress already..." Wan-Er tried to comfort Feng Monarch in a soft voice.

"The materials are all wasted..." Ye Xiao sighed and spoke in a gloomy voice.

[They certainly are.]

The three of them sighed too.

"What a shame. Till the last stove, the last portion of materials,

and..." Ye Xiao took a long sigh.

"Oh..." The three of them sighed at the same time. The last portion was wasted...

"And I only made two beads... I have been overestimating myself. I thought this dan was easy. That is my fault." Feng Monarch looked gloomy and regretful.

"That is alright. Just take it easy. It is fine. Really. I believe there will be one day... Urh... Wait... What did you say? What was it?" Ling Wuxie wanted to comfort Feng Monarch, then he suddenly realized something! He stopped and was shocked!

[What did the guy say earlier?]

Ling Wuxie looked aside and saw Wan-Er and Xiu-Er raise their heads. They were looking at Feng Monarch.

"What did I say? Well... Gosh. I overestimated myself. I thought this dan was easy. It is my fault!" Feng Monarch seemed even gloomier and more regretful.

"No, no, no... Before that! Two beads? Of what?" Wan and Xiu asked hurriedly.

They were more eager for the dan than Ling Wuxie for sure!

"Heaven Seizing Dan. I only made two!" Feng Monarch casually answered, "What a shame. I really feel ashamed for the number..."

"You made... made two?"

Ling Wuxie finally sobered up. He turned around and looked at Ye Xiao like he was having a good dream.

[What the hell! Did I hear it wrong?]

[No way. The three of us heard it wrong at the same time? No!]

...

Chapter 558: Nothing Serious!

"One thousand portions... And I only made two out of it..." Ye Xiao looked ashamed and said, "What a waste. I overestimated myself. I thought I was a genius dan-maker... Now my reputation is ruined..."

"That..." Ling Wuxie's lips were trembling. He jumped up and flourished his arms and legs, "Bloody hell! Feng Monarch, you are awesome! You are brilliant... You are fxcking great... Hahahaha... Awesome... I can't wait to see how you become even more fxcking great!"

Ling Wuxie was extremely surprised with joy.

Wan-Er and Xiu-Er were also enjoying it.

Heaven Seizing Dan! In the history, the conqueror of the universe gathered top ranged dan masters in the universe to make it! Within a hundreds stoves, only one succeeded!

And only one dan bead succeeded in that stove!

They actually didn't expect Feng Monarch to make it out of the one thousand portions. They thought it should only be enough for practice. They didn't thought he could actually make it...

However... unexpectedly, he... actually made it!

He made two in total!

That was a marvelous and beautiful myth!

Even Ling Wuxie started to talk nonsense now.

As long as he could make the dan beads, wasting one thousand portions of materials meant nothing. Even ten thousand portions were just nothing. Materials didn't matter at all!

Ye Xiao looked at the three of them. They were so thrilled. He now understood that he wouldn't need to worry much about the materials at all. Even if he used ten portions of materials and produced nothing, these guys would never blame him.

In fact, they were already grateful and cheered to know that he made it with only one thousand portions...

Ye Xiao thought, [These are really super figures from the Human Realm Upon Heavens? They are more like ignorant clodhoppers to me! I actually could have made more! There were too many different materials in the Space back then, so I only got two beads!]

[If I set the materials right, I would have shown you hundreds! I want to see how it would scare the shxt out of you clodhoppers!]

[Upper realms! Super figures! Pah!]

In the world, in fact, in the firmament, there was never anybody who dared to say that Ling Wuxie, Wan-Er and Xiu-Er were ignorant clodhoppers...

Well there was one now, Feng Monarch.

In fact, he had ridden on Master Bai and punched him so hard. It seemed not so unreasonable that he criticized these guys!

If Ling Wuxie knew what Ye Xiao was thinking right now, he would run into a wall to kill himself!

At least, he would shout out something like 'I am a well-informed and experienced cultivator... I have seen everything! I am not a clodhopper!' He would definitely shout it out.

"Feng Monarch, look... Can I... Can I have a look at the two dan beads... that you made? Nothing! I just want to... broaden my vision a bit! That's all!"

Xiu of the Heavens cautiously asked.

Xiu of the Heavens knew clear about Feng Monarch's bad temper. A bad word could enrage him instantly. However, she had to ask for it, since it concerned her master's future. Feng Monarch said that he had two dan beads, but no one saw them. She preferred to trust what she saw than what she heard!

"Why not? Sure! You don't need to ask really. I will show it to

you myself. The Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan is truly marvelous. That is some outstanding feature!" Ye Xiao reached out his hand and it sounded twice. - Pah! Pah! -

Two dan beads were slapped on the table.

The two supreme dan beads were jumping on the table and rolling around.

Every movement of the dan beads would bring a mass of dan cloud to rise up in the air. They just rolled a bit and the table was already covered by the cloud.

It was shining with golden lights. All of a sudden, there seemed to be a dragon roar and phoenix crow in the cloud...

At the same time, a smell of mystery, obscureness and ancientness spread away from the dan beads...

Suddenly, the entire place was filled with the strange but elegant smell.

It was not so dense, but whoever smelled it would feel completely eased and relaxed in the heart, even the soul!

Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan!

That was... the real marvelous divine dan!

Wan-Er, Xiu-Er and Ling Wuxie stared at the dan beads rolling on the table. They were stunned!

After a while, Xiu-Er firstly sobered up and exclaimed. She reached her hand so fast to grab the two dan beads. She nearly cried out. She just kept checking the dan beads to see if they were damaged.

Wan-Er and Ling Wuxie didn't think it strange at all. They both looked to Feng Monarch with hostility in their eyes.

"That... that is Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan!" Wan-Er shouted furiously, "How could you... How could you treat them like that? What a wreck! You said it is marvelous yourself! How could you treat it so badly like that... You..."

Wan-Er was so angry that she couldn't say anything more.

[You talked like you cherished them that much. Actually, you didn't even take a jade bottle to carry them. And you just slapped them on the table! You... You think these are marbles?]

"Brother Feng, you... Brother Feng, why did you..." Ling Wuxie rubbed his hands as his face contorted.

"What are you talking about?" Ye Xiao frowned. He didn't get it. "What is it? Those are only two dan beads! What does it take to even throw them away! Why so serious?"

The two ladies and Ling Wuxie were stunned. They stood there, having nothing to say.

[What did he just say?]

[What does it take to even throw them away?]

[Why so serious?]

[How could he... say that?]

[Oh my heavens! Look how casual you are acting... Do you know what disturbance it will bring if it goes to Human Realm Upon Heavens?]

[World destruction... bloodshed in streams... would not be worse enough to describe it!]

[All those super master figures in that world have children!]

[Many super figures have stupid useless children!]

[Those men have so many children. There are surely genius among them, but also a lot of dumbasses!]

[Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan is the perfect way to turn a moron

into a super genius!]

[That is the most important and attractive thing for those real super master figures!]

...

Chapter 559: You Clodhoppers!

Such incredible dan, which only existed in the myth, even people from Human Realm Upon Heavens could hardly be lucky to see it... was actually held by a man of such a low realm who was just weak like an ant... And he just throws it casually, saying that it wasn't worth much!

[What the hell?]

[Why? What is the situation!]

The three of them were all shocked. They couldn't think it through!

They felt like this Feng Monarch was the one from Human Realm Upon Heavens, while they were local clodhoppers in this place!

They were just like ignorant and uneducated fools.

The scorn of Feng Monarch was so obvious and he didn't even want to cover it!

Ling Wuxie twisted his mouth. "Brother Feng... These are Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan beads..."

"Sure they are! I know." Feng Monarch rolled his eyes and said, "I am not a fool. I made them myself. Do you think I have no idea

what they are?"

That meant, 'How can you ask me such a stupid question? I truly have doubts on your intelligence.'

Ling Wuxie felt dizzy.

[Damn it. That was whistling jigs to a milestone.]

"Well, they are Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan beads. So what? Before I made them, it is a mythical dan that I have never seen. However, I succeeded. These are just some dan beads to me, nothing more!" Feng Monarch humphed. "My god. It really is hard to communicate with you, the laical ones! Supreme Dan is something difficult to see for you. For me, it is just normal. When I catch somebody and want to torture him but not let him die, I always use Supreme Dan. I usually feed the guy when he is dying and then keep torturing him when he is back from death... I will always do over a dozen times till I feel satisfied."

"That is normal..." Feng Monarch looked at them. He couldn't understand it. "Do you really have to treat it like some precious treasure? Really?"

Ling Wuxie just wanted to kill himself.

He lowered his head with a dark face. He was upset and ashamed.

He actually got scorned by a weak native clodhopper in this low

realm!

[But he is right. I am acting like I am ignorant. That is the truth now. How do I deny it?]

[... For fxck's sake. Why would I meet such a freak!]

[He uses Supreme Dan on an inquest... Over a dozen times till he gets bored...]

[My god. I feel like I have fxcked a dog.] Ling Wuxie exclaimed in his heart.

Wan-Er and Xiu-Er didn't say anything.

They were showing a dark face while holding the dan beads. They took out two extremely exquisite small bottles and put the two dan beads into them.

They didn't talk to Feng Monarch at all.

They didn't know what to say.

What could they say anyway?

They had had enough for being shocked already!

What could they say! Feng Monarch spoke with the attitude of 'you are clodhoppers and you are ignorant stupid country men'! That was right on their faces.

The two ladies felt humiliated. At least, they were much less brassy than Lord Ling. He could totally handle it.

"Beautiful bottles." Feng Monarch praised, "That must be worth a fortune!"

[What? What did he say? The bottles are beautiful? Worth a fortune?]

[The ancient story of somebody [getting the casket and returning the pearl](#) is hilarious. Feng Monarch is a vivid example right here now. He actually acted so stupid when we are most embarrassed! This is such a blessed chance to fight back!]

"Clodhopper! Country man!" the three of them shouted at the same time.

Finally, they got a chance to vent the anger!

[Haha! Now it is our turn!]

[Fortune goes round and round, and now it is on my side!]

Ling Wuxie shouted the loudest.

[Seriously, no matter how beautiful the bottles are, they are just bottles! They are never more precious than what they carry inside!]

[You actually said such an ignorant and foolish thing! You are the real clodhopper! It is such a good chance to vent the anger in my chest!]

Ye Xiao was embarrassed.

[Retribution does come fast. Only a few seconds, and it is their turn to scorn on me.]

"I really don't want to judge, but... Feng Monarch." Xiu of the Heavens felt so bad for the dan beads. "You are so capable to make dan beads. That is right. But you should at least prepare some bottles for them. How could you... Gosh..."

She really didn't know what else to say.

She had no words for this ignorant man.

"Some bottles?" The next words that came out of Feng Monarch's mouth turned sharp, "Lady Xiu-Er, it is always easier to talk. Do you know how much a bottle cost? Do you know how much it takes to make a bottle? Do you know I am totally short for money? I even need to borrow money for food! You want me to prepare bottles for you? Fifty dan beads, I will need to offer twenty-five

bottles! Those whose belly is full never know the bitterness of misfortune... Easier said than done!"

The three of them were all speechless!

[This man's thought is truly rambling, unintelligible, nonsense and... conscienceless!]

[You are the boss of the richest man in the world! It is hard to imagine how much money you can get! Nobody is richer than you! How could you cry being poor here!]

[That is totally a big lie out of your dishonest mouth!]

[I don't know how to disdain you more really!]

"You are taking it too far, Feng Monarch. Everybody knows you are the real rich man in the world. Nobody can surpass you in wealth in Land of Han-Yang. Being too humble makes one hypocritical!" Wan-Er smiled and said it out! She couldn't stand it anymore.

"Heavens! Where is my money then! I am truly out of money now..."

He strictly stuck on the word money. He groaned, "I don't know if you are pretending or not. People spent a huge fortune to put on a bounty on my head... How can I endure that humiliation? I have to get back to them, right? I must do it! What is the best way to do

it? A tooth for a tooth! An eye for an eye! That is why we posted a reward warrant too! We want the lives of those who wanted me die ..."

...

Getting the Casket and Returning the Pearl

A man from the state of Chu wanted to sell a precious pearl in the state of Zheng. He made a casket for the pearl out of the wood from a magnolia tree, which he fumigated with spices. He studded the casket with pearls and jade, ornamented it with red gems and decorated it with kingfisher feathers. A man of the state of Zheng bought the casket and gave him back the pearl.

Too luxuriant decoration usually supersedes what really counts. This man from Chu certainly knew how to sell a casket but he was no good at selling his pearl. And the man of Zheng didn't know which is really valuable.

Chapter 560: I Am Deadly Poor!

"It costs money to put on that warrants! Everything takes money! Good service means lots of money! We are selling everything we can to get enough money for that bounty! We are getting through miserably poor days for that... I really have no money now. I don't mind if you will tease me or not. I actually have borrowed a lot too... We all only have one meal a day to save money. Only one! Gruel only! Everyday! Not even with side dishes..." Feng Monarch talked and talked with plaintiveness, although even he didn't believe what came out of his mouth.

However, it sounded reasonable!

"Urh? Really?" House of the Chaotic Storms had given up on all their previous plans, so they weren't that interested in what happened outside the bamboo forest. They had been staying in there for a long time and didn't know what exactly was going on.

They knew nothing about the reward warrant of Ling-Bao Hall.

"Urh. I see." Xiu of the Heavens nodded and said, "May I ask you something though. You have been getting through real poor days to save money. And you have borrowed money too. How much money did you exactly get anyway?"

"Ahem... Well... In total..." Feng Monarch blinked, "Well... Something like... Five hundred billion..."

- Puff! -

Wan-Er was drinking tea and she spat it out right after she heard it. All was spat out on Feng Monarch's face. She was choking, "Ahem... Cough, cough, cough..."

Xiu-Er and Ling Wuxie were speechless. They stared at this shameless Monarch without saying a word!

[God damn you... What the hell... You actually made five hundred billion out of it...]

The three of them all felt like there were ten thousand alpacas running over in their hearts.

[How does such a shameless person live in this beautiful world...]

[None of us can defeat him in shamelessness competition!]

"Fxck!" Ling Wuxie couldn't hold it anymore. He finally said the word that he didn't dare to say!

Loud and clear!

He couldn't stand it anymore...

"You are really fxcking good at saving money, aren't you!" Ling Wuxie rolled up his eyes. He felt short in breath.

Xiu-Er looked at Feng Zhiling and sneered, "Wow. Ling-Bao Hall is going through such a tough time. Feng Monarch, the most famous person in the universe, is actually going through poor days. You said you have borrowed some money. Do you want some help from House of the Chaotic Storms too?"

That was sarcasm. Everybody knew that.

Five hundred billion! How could he be short in money?

However, unexpectedly, right after Xiu-Er said the question, Feng Monarch just got on to her with gratefulness.

He grabbed Xiu-Er's hand and shook it. "Thank you! Thank you so so much... Lady Xiu-Er, you are a generous and kind lady. Please support me! I am so poor. I truly don't have money! They say one can do nothing without money. That is so true..."

As he spoke, he sighed. "I have never thought that I would end up in such a mess like this... Gosh. Lady Xiu-Er, you are so nice. I always believe there are more nice people than evil... Oh right! How can I forget! You and Master Bai are leaving. I guess you won't return to this countryside anymore, right? House of the Chaotic Storms will surely be dismissed. Money is going to be meaningless to you too... Right... That's right. Why not just give it all to me? I won't mind. You know. When I have no money to use, I lose confidence. Without confidence, I can't make good dan! You are smart people. You know it, don't you?"

"Ahhaha... Finally, somebody showed up and solved my problem... You are my savior, Lady Xiu-Er. When will the money get to me? House of the Chaotic Storms is a powerful organization. You surely can give me thousands of billions, right? Unlike Ling-Bao Hall, we can't even take out five hundred billion. We need to sell everything and starve ourselves for it."

"Oh right. You said because I don't have bottles to protect the dan beads, I ruined them. The next time you come by, please remember to bring me more of this kind of bottle. Look. Confidence is back to me immediately..."

Xiu-Er's hand was held tight in Feng Monarch's hands. She was shocked!

Not only her.

Ling Wuxie and Wan-Er were both shocked too...

Ling Wuxie, even Wan-Er shouted out in the mind, [What the fxck!]

That was a loud and resounding shout in their hearts!

There were no other words that could express their true feelings this moment!

[How shameless does he need to be to say such words?]

[As the wealthiest person in the world, he could actually play such a scene so shamelessly. That is... embarrassing!]

Xiu of the Heavens never thought that her casual words would bring such a trouble. Now her hand was held, and she couldn't do anything. She was stunned.

[Who told you our money will be meaningless?]

[We are an organization that can stir a disturbance in the world and collapse a kingdom easily. Do you know how much it will take us on dismissal wages? We are leaving. That's right. We should at least leave some money for the people who have been working for us, don't you think? Besides... Even if we truly won't need a bit of the money anymore...]

[Why should we give it to you?]

[Thousands of billion? You think we are the same stupid like you? Wasting money like that? A bounty?]

Xiu-Er was stunned. She said, "Feng Monarch, you... you are joking, right?"

Feng Monarch was surprised. "What? Why would I joke on such a brutal thing about myself? That is money! Money that is enough to murder a few generations! I am serious. Look at my eyes. Can you see anything not serious in them?"

What a joke. Wan Zhenghao was drained now. How could Feng Monarch let go of such a generous contributor?

Xiu-Er frowned and looked at Wan-Er. Her eyes were speaking, 'What should I do?'

Wan-Er rolled up her eyes pretending she did not see her.

[Such trouble, I should just behave myself and let you handle it yourself.]

[What if I am going to say something wrong and Feng Monarch seized the chance to make more requests...]

[Even if he wouldn't ask for more, what if he grabs my hand too? I don't think it is wise to mess with this guy right now. I have to be more careful than you, sister!]

"Feng Monarch, look... We don't actually have lots of money. Thousands of billion is way beyond our capability..." Xiu-Er tried to get her hand out as she spoke.

...

Chapter 561: Ripped Off!

"Oh. I know good wealth is hard to give up. I was just saying... Just show me the kindness. Give me no matter how much you think is fine. Well, it should be at least enough to feed my men. I don't want to see my people die starving." Feng Monarch said, "Besides, you won't need the money in the future. It can perfectly solve my problem right now. I need it while you don't. What a beautiful thing."

"Well... fine." Xiu-Er thought that she should give him some. Feng Monarch said that he had no confidence without money, and no good dan without confidence. How could she not give him the money then? So she weakly spoke, "I will send somebody here... with one billion. How about that?"

Feng Monarch's face turned dark all of a sudden. He was unsatisfied. "What did you say? One billion? Just that? Are you humiliating me? That hurts! I endured the embarrassment in my mind and asked for money. That is what you promise me? What can I do with it? No way. That is so humiliating. I think I completely lost my confidence now..."

Ling Wuxie sighed while facing the sky.

He finally realized that Feng Monarch was waiting for them today for the money!

One billion was humiliating...

Everybody would want to be humiliated if that was true! Every single one!

They would cry and beg for that humiliation!

"How much do you need then? We absolutely don't have thousands of billion!" Xiu of the Heavens gritted her teeth.

"Oh you don't have thousands of billion? Just give me some then. I won't think it too little. I just need money for food. Really." Feng Monarch smiled.

Xiu of the Heavens really wanted to kick him bad. [You said you need money for food, and you said it was humiliating to give you only one billion... Now you said you won't think it's too little.]

[What the hell do you want?]

However, she couldn't say one billion anymore.

She was hesitating because she didn't know how much would be fine. She was thinking seriously about it. They truly wouldn't need any money in the future. When they returned to the upper realm, money in this world meant trash to them. It would only occupy their room. She decided to give him more... Finally, when she was about to say it...

Wan-Er said with a soft voice, "Feng Monarch is right. We won't need the money anymore... We can't take it back to Human Realm

Upon Heavens, can we? Let's just give him all the ten billion. We are not saving a penny then... Just let the guys find their own way to live the rest of their lives. They are all wealthy and fit. They won't starve anyway."

Xiu-Er was relieved. She said, "That's right! Feng Monarch is our friend. Money means too little compared to our relations anyway..."

She thought, [That was close! I was going to say fifty billion right then...]

Ye Xiao was stunned. He stared at Wan of the Clouds.

[The girl is so smart.]

[She said they are giving it all out.]

[Who knows how much do you really have? You can just say whatever you want.]

[And she satirized me. 'Just let the guys find their own way to live the rest of their lives. They are all wealthy and fit. They won't starve anyway...']

[Since she said so, I can't be shameless to ask for all, can I?]

[I have to leave some for you, don't I?]

Ye Xiao laughed and clapped his hands. He was spirited up as he said in a peaceful voice, "Great! Lady Wan-Er is such a decisive person! Friends should help each other indeed! Deal! Ten billion it is then! With that, my men can at least have some food to eat. I won't worry anymore. Confidence back! I have a slightly bigger chance to make more dan beads. I believe I will make more better dan beads in faster rate. What this lady did is truly generous and helpful. Your wisdom shines in the room."

Wan-Er was pissed.

[Asshole! He actually took all the money. And he was satirizing me implicitly! Of course I can understand it! That is not a good praise but a criticism!]

[I see. I understand now. This guy knows we are leaving. We won't need the money anymore, and he is using the dan-making business to force us. He would take as much as he could from us! He wouldn't stop.]

Thinking of that, Wan-Er gave Xiu-Er a blink of hint that only the two of them understood.

Xiu-Er frowned and spoke in a low voice, "Feng Monarch, isn't it a bit immoral? That is all we have now. If we give it all to you, what should we do about our men? They have been following us so many years. Now that they get nothing in return. That is not right. How about this, the ten billion... We will keep..."

"Right! You are right about me. I totally forgot how to be a nice guy as a fortune was on my doorstep. My fault! How could I forget that." Feng Monarch clapped and laughed. He just interrupted Xiu of the Heavens.

The ladies felt that it was started to go wrong. They stared at him.

"That was my mistake. Look. You are right. You are leaving, so you won't need the money, right? And, you have lots of men to feed, right? They have been in the House of the Chaotic Storms, so they must have offended lots of people outside. When you leave, they lose their powerful support. Troubles will crowd onto them. You won't be happy to see that, right?"

Feng Monarch clapped and held his chest, trying to act generous, "No problems at all. Just take it easy! I will still stay in this world! Just send your men to me! They can follow me! I won't let them suffer! They will have food and drinks, and a happy long life after!"

"Who dares to bully my men, humph, will go to see the underworld! In fact, I set the bounty this time spending everything I have to build the prestige of Ling-Bao Hall. I want to make sure nobody messes with Ling-Bao Hall! Nobody dares to mess with any of my men!"

"I guess you can all trust me on that. I am faithful to friends! As long as they all bow to me, they will be fed well! They will share my happiness! Don't worry. Just relax and send them to me! Nothing to worry about! You can go with an easy heart!"

Wan-Er and Xiu-Er opened their mouths and couldn't say a word. They were stunned as they stared at Feng Monarch. Suddenly, they felt so dizzy...

They even wanted to spit out blood!

...

Chapter 562: Escape

Xiu-Er wanted to slap herself hard!

[That is all my fault! I could have said anything else. Why did I have to say that? Why...]

[Great. Now the guy is sticking on it.]

[How bodacious he is. Whoever have been following the House of the Chaotic Storms are outstanding cultivators! They are all powerful enough to shock the martial world!]

[Any of them are in equal levels with Ning Biluo and Zhao Pingtian. The man who fought against Zhao Pingtian is one of our men. Not everyone can casually fight against the Killer King and take advantage in the fight!]

[Cultivators like that are not only powerful in martial arts, but also in connections. Even if they are not our men, they are still the ones who bully others. No one dares to mess with them! Who can possibly bully them?]

[And you... actually want to protect them?]

[You, Feng Monarch, are powerful, rich and strong indeed. However, you shouldn't be so arrogant! They really don't need you!]

[What do we need to worry about anyway? We are sure they will live on very happy lives! They will be all good!]

[Listen to you. How generous. You think our men are all useless, weak and stupid men that need to be taken care of...]

['As long as they all bow to me, they will be fed well!']... What a joke! Any one of our men is a powerful figure in this world!]

[Even in front of the kings of the kingdoms in this world, they can do everything they are happy to.]

[You feed them?]

[Pah!]

[If we give them to you... then our money will really become useless...]

[You will be the one who profited the most I guess!]

[And you will get both manpower and money at the same time. How do you come up with that so fast!]

[I... What the...]

"Our men in House of the Chaotic Storms have their own ways to

live. We dare not to bother you..." Wan-Er was having a headache now. "Promise is a promise. I said you will have ten billion, and we will give you that. No tricks. My men are all obstinate and unruly guys. I don't want to see any conflicts..."

"No, no, no. I love obstinate and unruly men! Only capable men can be obstinate and unruly. They are true capable men..." Ye Xiao seized the opportunity. "I won't accept those who are not obstinate and unruly really..."

Wan and Xiu both had no idea what to say now.

Feng Monarch was so good at talking. He was truly speaking invincible words of chaotic storms. He had talked like the men of the House of the Chaotic Storms were weak and useless, but now he said they were capable men.

Apparently, he was determined to get some people from House of the Chaotic Storms.

"Ahem... Feng Monarch only used one thousand portions of material to succeed in making a Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan. You are truly a genius dan-maker. However, no matter how capable you are, you can't do it without the supplies. I am leaving right now to gather more medical materials... We need a lot of materials in good quality to make sure the dan beads will be made successfully..." Xiu-Er changed the topic, trying to avoid eye contact to Feng Monarch. She felt that she should stop talking now. She figured if she said more words, they would be robbed more things.

"I will go too! I need to prepare the bottles! That is a tough job! I should better get on it right now..." The two ladies hurriedly stood up and grabbed the bottles with her hands before running away embarrassedly.

They immediately disappeared.

They fled like there was a mad dog running after them...

They were like junkyard dogs and escaped criminals.

Apparently, they had never been so embarrassed in their lives, running away like that.

How horrible!

[Feng Monarch is so greedy!]

[If we stay any longer, maybe he will get over and grab our hands again. Maybe he will want the both of us to follow him too...]

Ling Wuxie looked at them and nearly laughed to the point of choking.

He surely understood it.

Feng Monarch was obviously robbing them!

With the capability of making Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan, he could ask for whatever he wanted. The more the better.

The ladies were not so stupid after all. They left right in time, otherwise, they would have been robbed many more things!

Apparently, the two ladies were far worse than Feng Monarch in playing schemes!

They knew he was occupying the higher position, yet they still dared to negotiate with him. They would surely be ripped off.

"How strange it is!" Ling Wuxie frowned and said, "What were they thinking about, these two little girls? It is quite clear. They are leaving, and neither money nor men mean anything to them anymore. Why don't they just give them to you? You are doing a great favor for them after all. That could at least be a favor returned to you. It is more reasonable to get a better relationship with a master dan-maker."

For Ling Wuxie, the two ladies were acting strangely.

To boost the dan-making process, Ling Wuxie would be willing to give Feng Monarch the entire House of the Chaotic Storms. That was a fair deal after all!

"Well, Brother Ling, you don't understand." Ye Xiao smiled. The

ladies, the ones he could rob things from, were now gone, and he didn't really like Ling Wuxie, so he returned to normal. "Men are all free in the heart. People have their rights to choose their own lives. Nobody wants to be given away like objects. They wouldn't agree. That is reasonable."

"You know they would decline, then why did you ask for it?" Ling Wuxie said.

"Sometimes, we will be in an embarrassing time. I do need money badly." Ye Xiao was being frank. "I am running out of money. Those that I asked for later, I was just saying."

Ling Wuxie understood.

"When the House of the Chaotic Storms is dismissed, those men will be free. I don't think they are willing to join other sects... Then, in the entire Land of Han-Yang, only my place can be considered a good place to go. As long as they want to come, I won't turn them down..."

Ye Xiao smiled with confidence.

"Those who have their places to go, they will go. They can live their lives with freedom. Those who wants to join me, I will accept them with warm welcome!" Ye Xiao said, "So, even though they give me those men, I won't really take them... How can I accept a bunch of men who are obligated to come?"

Chapter 563: Not to Shrink from Death!

Ling Wuxie laughed. He was pleased. "Your smart head is as wise as Bai Chen. I like it. I like it. Hahahaha..."

And then he said, "Brother Feng, how long do you think it will take to finish the fifty Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan beads?"

He looked solemn when he asked.

Ye Xiao thought for a while and slowly answered, "Since it is you asking, I won't pretend about anything. As long as I have enough medical materials... with what I have learned during the past few days, as long as I can be safe from the divine punishment, it will take me two months to finish it!"

"Great!" Ling Wuxie's eyes lit up. He felt relieved. "Brilliant! Brother Feng! What an accomplishment in dan-making area. Not to mention in this world, even in Human Realm Upon Heavens, you are an incredible master!"

He thought for a while and asked again, "By the way, how many materials are needed?"

"Well... Urh... It is hard to say. I am confident about making this dan, however, it depends on my capability at thirty percent while seventy percent on luck. That is the reality." Ye Xiao didn't say it because he wanted more materials. He really wasn't sure about it.

Brother Egg made him three beads from the one thousand portions.

Would it make another three beads from another one thousand portions of materials? Maybe there would only be one. That was possible!

"All in all, the more the better."

Ye Xiao could only answer with that. And then he sighed.

Ling Wuxie was understanding.

Dan-making was something uncontrollable after all. The higher level the dan was, the more difficult it was to produce. Supreme Dan was the most difficult. Otherwise, how could there only be one Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan bead in the long history! No one ever made it after that unique one before Ye Xiao!

Even super dan-making masters like Ye Xiao, who knew a lot about Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan already, couldn't be sure about it. To make one stove successfully among a hundred failures could be a legend!

How could he make every stove succeed?

That was impossible, even for gods!

If Feng Monarch told Ling Wuxie that he could make every stove succeed, Ling Wuxie would consider him mad! That must be crazy!

Ling Wuxie changed the topic, as he had known what the other wanted. He said, "You are marvelous in dan-making, Brother Feng. You are doing something legendary in the history. However, I haven't see any divine punishment so far this time? Did you use my tower that I gave you?"

"What do you mean your tower? That is my tower!" Ye Xiao was being unpleasant.

Ling Wuxie felt embarrassed. He felt like he had just choked with a piece of shxt.

Ye Xiao said, "How do you think I would use it? I just made it large enough for me to get into it. I made the dan beads inside it. I needed to concentrate, so I didn't pay much attention on the divine punishment. Didn't I just give the two ladies two supreme dan beads? How can I still stand here like this if I didn't escape the punishment?"

"Urh..." Ling Wuxie speechlessly looked at him. "Well... That's it?..."

[That was...]

[Awesome!]

[This is... so... embarrassing though!]

[He actually got into the tower to make dan...]

[That is more than brilliant. How could I not think of it?]

[I thought he would put it on standby to avoid the lightning strikes...]

[That is what we do up there anyway.]

[He just got in the tower...]

[The Golden Soul Tower is so powerful and solid. To defend from the divine punishment lightning in this way would keep him uninterrupted. It is absolutely safe in there. The punishment lightning in this realm may be fatal for local people, but they will be fine if they don't get hit. For Golden Soul Tower, such lightning strike is never going to make any damage!]

[For fxck's sake... Why didn't I think of this way. If I did, I wouldn't need to give him my Golden Soul Tower. God damn it...]
Ling Wuxie thought.

...

He stayed for a while more before he left.

Before he left, he casually asked Ye Xiao something.

"Brother Feng, basically, with your capability, your schemes, your wisdom, your... everything... you shouldn't look like this. This appearance of yours shouldn't be really you..."

Ling Wuxie said, "May I ask, is Feng Zhiling your true identity?"

"Is this really you?"

He asked in a casual tone, like it was just a simple question, but also a serious one.

Ye Xiao didn't answer him directly. He secretly smiled and said, "Why don't you guess?"

Ling Wuxie laughed and left.

"No, I won't!"

"I just need to wait!"

"Someday... there will be someone in Human Realm Upon Heavens using that tower! I will get to know who you are! Such incredible treasure, which is well combine with your soul, I don't think you will abandon it, will you?"

"Hahahaha..."

Ye Xiao laughed while looking at the back of Ling Wuxie.

"Well, this Lord Ling is not only a man that can be a good friend, but also a man who is full of fun."

Ye Xiao murmured.

...

The men from the five clans came to say goodbye to Feng Monarch. They could have left two days earlier, but Feng Monarch hadn't shown up in the two days. They wanted to say goodbye in person to show their respect. They actually didn't want to displease Feng Monarch. It was quite a horrible thing to make him angry.

Luckily, they got the chance to take leave now. No more waiting.

"Feng Monarch, we are leaving today." Long Tianyun said, "Before we go, we came to see you. We want to say goodbye to you and also show our respect and gratitude to you."

"Take care." Ye Xiao was straightforward.

"Thank you, Monarch. We won't forget the great favor! Whatever you need, just write us a letter..."

Long Tianyun looked at others.

They all stood straight up and loudly spoke at the same time, "Anything you command! We won't think even in death!"

"I am flattered." Ye Xiao sighed.

When they were all about to get out of the door, Ye Xiao casually said, "Maybe there's something you can give me some advices on... The two great sects are heavily damaged... It could be a great opportunity for you guys..."

Their eyes lit up. "Anything, Monarch!"

...

Chapter 564: Accident!

"Don't take it as an order. I just want to give you some words. Opportunity never waits. When it is gone, it never comes back!" Ye Xiao grinned. "One more thing. After a month, Ling-Bao Hall will hold another auction. There will be more supreme dan beads on sale... If you are still interested, prepare more money or resources. I am sure you will get what you wish for."

He smiled. "It is still a secret by far. Only me and you guys know it."

Their eyes lit up!

[Opportunity!]

[God blessed opportunity!]

Feng Monarch had made it quite clear for them now.

The two great sects were in a tough time with huge damages inside. Even if they wanted to do anything, they would only target Ling-Bao Hall. They didn't have much power to deal with other forces after all. As long as Ling-Bao Hall stayed strong, the two sects wouldn't be able to mess with other people.

The time while Ling-Bao Hall and the two great sects were fighting each other was the perfect time for noble clans to rise up.

Supreme Dan beads would help them raise a bunch of geniuses in a short time...

Noble clans had gotten some supreme dan beads in the last auction, but they surely wouldn't mind to get more, would they?

Who would not want to have more geniuses in their clan?

The noble clans didn't know there would be supreme dan bead in the auction, so they collected money in a hurry. They could have gotten many more dan beads than they had. This time, they knew about the auction in advance. That was a huge difference.

They had two months to prepare for it. They could surely collect much more money and resources to buy more supreme dan beads in the next auction.

"One more thing. I have been reaching the cultivation limit of Land of Han-Yang. When I step up off this world, I will never return." Ye Xiao smiled, "In other words, I will be leaving Land of Han-Yang at any time... I won't stay in this world for a long time. One thing can be sure, however, when I leave, there will be no more new supreme dan beads in this world."

Long Tianyun and his people took in a deep breath. They didn't say anything in response.

Their eyes were turning brighter and brighter.

[If Feng Monarch leaves and there will be no supreme dan beads in this world, we will become the only ones who can have genius young generations... In the future, our clan will surely be the most powerful forces in the world!]

[Even if the two great sect will still exist, they must have been broken down by Feng Monarch... Struggling... Does it mean, the bright future of our clans are just shown in this conversation?]

"If we five clans can have a bright future, you are the person we should always be grateful to, Feng Monarch!" Long Tianyun and his men made a bow with hands folded in front. "We won't forget your great kindness!"

They left.

Wan Zhenghao showed up and said, "Monarch, I admire you so much... What you just said would definitely make them give all their money in. They might even carry great loans to buy your dan beads and they will be grateful to you... Hahaha."

Ye Xiao half closed his eyes and said, "You are wrong. You are too selfish thinking that way! They are grateful because they feel it. They feel it now and they will feel it then. I am offering them this opportunity to truly rise within the next thousands of years. If they miss it, it won't come back."

Wan Zhenghao nodded. "Understood. They would spend every penny for this opportunity!"

Ye Xiao seemed lost in thought after answering him.

He was thinking about it.

What he said to Long Tianyun was true, that he wouldn't stay in Land of Han-Yang for a long time.

However, if he took leave, the people he left behind would definitely be a solicitude to him.

Friends, brothers, subordinates... the soldiers of his father... relatives... That was a huge amount.

He needed to consider these people too.

Once he left, they would lose their solid support.

He thought it was better to maintain a good relationship with the five clans and help them rise fast. In the future, they could return the favor on the people Ye Xiao cared in this world. That was what he wanted!

After all, Ling-Bao Hall had just spent five hundred billion to revenge!

That was only a beginning!

That was enough.

That was enough to frighten people in this world and keep them from hurting his people.

That was he what he was thinking—arrangements for his departure.

That was also what he was doing.

...

When the men of five clans left Ling-Bao Hall, the other three clans people bowed to Long Tianyun and said with sincerity, "Thank you, Master Long, for your kindness!"

Long Tianyun smiled. "No need. We are on the same boat. We should look after each other no matter what."

The men of the other three clans nodded.

After that, the five clans were like a union led by Long Clan.

They all knew that since the day they entered Ling-Bao Hall, Long Tianyun was the one who made all the smart steps. He was the man who led them to the opportunity to rise!

They all felt grateful for what Long Tianyun did sincerely.

Even though there would be conflicts among the clans and they couldn't really get along with each other so peacefully, they never would never forget what they had been through together those days!

...

At this moment, the assassins from Ling-Bao Hall had been killing everywhere!

Nobody stayed beside Ye Xiao. When Ye Xiao left Ling-Bao Hall, he was so cautious.

In fact, that wasn't necessary. Since Feng Zhiling took over Ling-Bao Hall, he barely failed. Whenever he took a strike, it shocked the world. Thousands of assassins killed with three poison strikes. People of the two great sects, including Bu Jingtian, known as the No. 1 Cultivator, died.

Nobody else in Land of Han-Yang was capable of doing that!

Whoever dared to mess with Feng Zhiling was simply looking for death!

However, things were always unexpected in reality!

For example...

When Feng Zhiling took a turn in an alley and was about to take off his disguise, he felt something wrong. He felt something extremely dangerous!

That feeling was like bumping into a strong tiger in the dark of an old forest. He hadn't seen any people, but he was already having goosebumps all over his body!

[This must be... a powerful superior cultivator!]

...

Chapter 565: Ambush!

Who was Ye Xiao? No matter how people sang songs about his victory, he never really cared. He had never cared about things in this low realm ever. He would never be satisfied for surpassing a bunch of ants, would he?

He didn't feel anything special. However, he suddenly felt the danger getting closer. He was alerted. He didn't panic though. He suddenly moved so fast as he rushed away from that area!

He was like a soft breeze blowing away but fast!

In people's eyes, he was just a little bit faster than usual. However, he was actually moving extremely fast. He appeared far away from where he originally stood, and he even left a blurry image.

- Shoot! - A light sound passed by.

A sharp sword light went through that image of Ye Xiao.

The glow of stars splashed around.

At the same time, someone made a sound. "Oh?"

Apparently, the person who made the strike was quite surprised about that missed attack. He was surprised about Feng Monarch's

real capability!

Ye Xiao had been rushing away like a shooting star, disappearing in the first light of dawn with his extreme martial art.

There were more than one enemy there! He got enemies from three directions!

These enemies were extremely powerful this time. The vigor they emitted were so overwhelming. It was frightening.

With attacks from three sides, there was only one direction where he could flee to.

Ye Xiao rushed away the second when he noticed the situation.

However, he regretted just after he rushed!

He realized he should have never rushed in that direction. It seemed to be the only way to get away from danger, but it was an unpredictable way!

He should have ran back to where he came from or to the right of where he stood!

If he ran back, it was Ling-Bao Hall. If he ran right, it would lead him to his home.

There would be reinforcements in both sides, powerful ones! That would be enough to help him take down whoever was attacking him.

However, when he noticed the enemies, the first thought he had was "they are strong", and indeed they were. Three peak Sky Origin Stage cultivators on three different directions were surrounding him.

The only way out of that circle was where he had just rushed out.

If he ran to another direction, the only thing he needed was somebody to stop the three men for just a while. However, he might not be able to get away anyway. He could be in a real negative situation. If the three men joined each other and fought against him together, he would be totally knocked down!

That was why he rushed to the only direction that seemed safe.

However, when he just rushed out, he knew he had made the wrong decision...

He had no choice now. Even if he had a second chance to choose again, he would still choose this way...

He knew he was probably rushing to a trap, but he still would choose this way. If he was stopped in any of other three directions, the innocent citizens would very likely die in that battle!

The qi they would emit could be strong enough to push normal people to death! No one would survive that!

Whoever was attacking him must know how he would think of it. Maybe they just didn't care at all.

The men who were messing with Feng Zhiling this time were truly cruel and merciless! They treated people like grasses!

If Ye Xiao decided to fight them in that place, they wouldn't care about the thousands of lives around!

Ye Xiao moved like a flying arrow shooting out.

He had made up his mind.

Since he had chosen this way, he would stick with it. [Would I fear the trap they set for me?]

The next moment...

Three streams of killing qi boosted up and followed him from three directions like crazy!

Even now, Ye Xiao still couldn't see the faces of his enemies. However, the killing qi was clearly felt! They were following him so fast. A little bit behind him, but staying in a certain distance.

The three of them made use of an extreme murdering qi to aim at Ye Xiao!

Because of that qi, he couldn't change his direction at all. He had to keep rushing forward! He could either only get rid of them or get caught by them!

If he dared to make a turn, he might get stricken with that horrible qi in an instant and fall to earth!

A hidden enemy was the most threatening one.

Ye Xiao sighed, but he could only just keep rushing forward.

As he was moving, he was turning faster and faster. He had reached the limitation of his speed.

- Shoot! - A black light flashed behind him. Only the extreme speed could make such a phenomenon!

It just appeared in a second, but it had boosted Ye Xiao forward and created a longer distance between him and the guys behind.

They had been about fifty meters away, but were now eighty!

It was not a safe distance yet, but it was much better. If he made a turn now, he wouldn't be stricken down so quickly. That was a huge difference. Death and life were always standing in a minor

difference!

Enemies saw that happen, they shouted together!

Successfully getting away from the enemies, Ye Xiao felt relieved. He just wanted to take a turn, but he heard the shout behind him. The shouts were from three different directions around him. Three streams of qi rushed up to attack him with murderous intents!

The killing qi rushed up to the sky!

It locked on Ye Xiao!

Ye Xiao was totally pissed!

[The two great sects really have done some hard work to deal with me this time. They actually sent out so many master superior cultivators? What a great plan!]

...

Chapter 566: Hunt!

When Ye Xiao noticed the danger at the beginning, he knew that it was the two great sects who arranged this ambush!

After all, in this world, there was no other people who dared to lay their hands on him, or was capable of taking his life!

He had shown the world a crazy image of himself that he could spend every penny for a bounty. It would frighten any force in this world!

Nobody dared to mess such a mad and powerful man!

However, the two great sect were different.

They were the only people who wouldn't care about that bounty.

That was why Ye Xiao was sure they were the only people who could arrange this ambush.

It had only been six days since he killed the guys of the two great sects. He hadn't thought that they would get back on him so soon!

And so fiercely!

He didn't expect such a powerful counterattack!

That shouldn't be possible. The two great sects were thirty-seven thousand miles away from Chen-Xing City!

That was a distance that normal people might not be able to finish in their lives.

Besides, normally, when a sect received the report about such a loss, they would gather their people to have a meeting and discuss plans about it. The two great sects should have spent days to choose the men and to have a conversation between two sects. Only after all that could they send the men on the mission...

That was at least half a month of work!

However, within six days, they finished all the works and started the ambush!

Even if they skipped all the other works and started the mission right away, it was impossible to reach the capital within just a few days, even though they were all Sky Origin Stage cultivators!

[Even if they didn't sleep and spent every second to come without a stop, they still couldn't arrive so soon!]

Ye Xiao felt that something was terribly wrong. There must be something unexpected that happened. There must be a coincidence that led things to an unexpected direction! He truly was unprepared this time!

"Caution is the parent of safety. I was not being arrogant, but I was careless..." He sighed. "Ah, Xiao Monarch, didn't I make the same mistake and ended up being surrounded by the three factions the day I died and disappeared!"

"With such vivid lessons, I am still making the same mistake! Is it a warning from my fate?"

Ye Xiao knew who the enemies were, but he had nothing to do right now. The distance was pulling further and further, but they were locking on him fiercely. Eighty meters was not a short distance, but for Sky Origin Stage cultivators, it only took a time of breathing in to reach. He couldn't get rid of it. He couldn't head back to the House of Ye.

He knew that as long as he could get close enough to House of Ye, Song Jue would save him for sure. He might be able to kill all the three guys instantly. None of them could leave alive!

However, he was too far away now. Ye Xiao couldn't get any closer to him.

He was moving to a different direction at the beginning after all.

The first mistake he made led him to this trap, and he was moving further and further in the dangerous direction now.

It was a short time since the attack began, however, the four of

them were moving so fast that they had already been out of the city. That was at least a hundred miles away from the House of Ye!

No matter how loudly he would shout, it wouldn't reach House of Ye.

Distant water couldn't put out a nearby fire!

Ye Xiao made up his mind and gritted his teeth. He just kept rushing forward. While he was moving, he thought, [F*ck! You all see me as a p*ssy while I am just an unawakened tiger!]

[Wait and see! Look how the Monarch kill all of you in a bloody way!]

As he was flying, he was speeding up. He gritted his teeth. [I don't need much time!]

[Only a moment to take a breath of rest, then I can take my counterattack immediately.]

However, while he was escaping, the suppressed vigor kept rising up and pushed him from time to time! It was getting so close!

Ye Xiao sensed it and found that at least eighteen more people joined the suppression!

Luckily, he was Xiao Monarch. Others would have been driven

crazy!

Eighteen Sky Origin Stage cultivators!

That meant eighteen of them were working together to force him down on a fixed way.

He couldn't change his direction anymore!

If he wanted to make a turn, he would need to operate the spiritual power to twist it a bit.

He would slow down because of it for a moment. That moment could lead him to a fatal situation!

One moment could decide the result of a fight between superior cultivators. How could he be careless dealing with a fight against all these Sky Origin Stage cultivators!

Any one of the eighteen men should be a world-shocking figure in the world. Now they were working together to deal with Ye Xiao! That was such a huge plan.

The two great sects really wanted him dead!

The vigor of the eighteen men gradually joined together from afar.

It formed into a overwhelming suppressing power on Ye Xiao!

Ye Xiao had to operate martial art to push back the suppression while he had to keep flying in a fixed speed.

He had to do it. Otherwise, when they all stopped to fight, he would be knocked down by the suppressing power right away without any further actions!

He crazily operated the East-rising Purple Qi to transfer the spiritual qi into speed and vigor.

At the same time, all flying needles and knives were ready in the Space. He needed to make sure everything was ready when a physical fight was started.

He also kept searching the Space. Last time, when he checked the Space, he didn't really do it carefully. However, he still found three Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan beads. He was thinking maybe there were also some poison beads too.

Those were some important weapon to save his life!

If he had that absolute poison beads, it would change the entire situation!

He searched for a while carefully, but only sighed with disappointment after that.

No poison beads!

He thought there might be some!

But there was actually none!

That meant he had to face the tough situation on his own!

However, those was eighteen Sky Origin Stage cultivators he needed to knock down!

Any of the eighteen men was in a higher level than him!

He was only level five of Sky Origin Stage after working so hard for a long time.

He had just reached that level too!

...

Chapter 567: What Are You Afraid Of?

Each of those men who were here to join the mission to trap Ye Xiao was beyond level eight of Sky Origin Stage!

Over half of them were much higher than that!

They had been suppressing Ye Xiao with spiritual energy so far. None of them had made any real attacks!

It should be quite an easy job to kill Ye Xiao, considering the capability of the team including eighteen powerful men!

However, they just kept forcing Ye Xiao to go on a certain direction. That must be on purpose. They might want to end Ye Xiao in a better place, or... maybe there was an extremely powerful figure waiting at the end of this way!

Ye Xiao thought for solutions. The suppression was getting more and more powerful!

He had a thought in mind eventually. [This is not right. Sunlight Sect and Starlight Sect are powerful, but they are still sects in this low realm. The superior cultivators in their sects should be no stronger than Bu Jingtian.]

[Bu Jingtian is dead. There may be some other superior cultivators in the two sects, but they must not be more powerful than Bu Jingtian. However, the three men of these eighteen who

ambushed me at the beginning are all beyond Bu Jingtian!]

[They have such power. They don't need to do this to me, do they? Maybe I am missing something? Maybe they scruple because of something I have?]

Thinking of that, he was suddenly enlightened. [I see. They are afraid of the poison of mine! I am the only one who knows the truth that I don't have that anymore. They don't!]

That was the only reason why those incredible superior cultivators didn't attack him in a fair fight within the shortest time. Feng Monarch's poison was too terrible!

If they gathered around to fight him and he made that poison strike, many of them would die for sure!

[That is why they surrounded me but leave a direction for me to run away. They keep forcing me to fly in order to consume my spiritual power! They are in a much higher level than me and they have eighteen men. They have more to consume than I do. If I keep fleeing like this, I will be exhausted to death! They wouldn't need to really make an attack to kill me if that happens! In this wide open field, even if I have the poison, it won't give a perfect hit. Well done! Great plan!]

Ye Xiao showed a cold smile.

[What a good plan!]

The plan was so thorough. It considered all aspects. If it went on well, they could easily kill Feng Zhiling, the most influential man in the world!

[Well, you have no idea what a great spiritual qi treasury I have inside me!]

[As long as I am still breathing, the spiritual qi in the Space will never stop coming out.]

[I will never run out of spiritual qi.]

[Moreover, if you make a physical attack on me and start a face to face fight, I may truly embarrassedly fall in your hands. However, you just keep pushing me with your spiritual energy. You want to consume me to death without any hard work. Well, thanks to that. Don't blame me to take that advantage then...]

As he thought, he had an idea. He slowed down a bit himself. It looked like he was as fast as he had been flying, but it was a tiny bit slower.

That minor difference could never escape the concentrated observation of those Sky Origin Stage cultivators!

It gave them a sign that Ye Xiao was starting to run out of spiritual power. That was a fake image though.

That was why he slowed down!

Twelve of them started to push him even harder. Apparently, they had used their full power now.

In their minds, it was the best moment to strike Feng Monarch, as he had shown tiredness.

A little further behind, the rest six of them caught up too. Gradually, six more masses of power joined in!

They were surpassing Ye Xiao in power levels. That was a unsolvable huge gap between them!

The eighteen of them all saw Feng Monarch getting slower and slower as expected. He was showing a painful look on the face, gasping. It looked like he was trying so hard to control his breath not to show the enemy how he felt, but he couldn't. If he wasn't running out of energy, he wouldn't look like that.

Even so, he still tried so hard to keep rushing ahead, but he was getting slower and slower.

The eighteen of them all felt overjoyed.

They crazily suppressed Ye Xiao and some of them started to shout to the sky!

The shout broke to the sky and spread in distance.

Far from them, there was someone else shouting back to answer.

It was right ahead of Ye Xiao.

There were more people hiding ahead of him, as expected!

The shout was coming over along with the wind.

Six powerful masses of suppressing forces were getting closer and closer!

They all pushed on Ye Xiao!

The enemies who were waiting for him in the only direction he was forced to go finally showed up!

Six people!

Ye Xiao sighed.

[So these are all they have?]

[The last group of them showed up. Now they are surrounding me in four directions. I am trapped!]

[How do I solve this problem now?]

[They have twenty-four cultivators who are beyond level eight of Sky Origin Stage only to get on me, a level five Sky Origin Stage cultivator!]

[I am flattered!]

Ye Xiao was feeling it, the hunting in circle. His eyes lit up. He suddenly stopped, gasping. He staggered before firmly stepping on the floor. It looked like he was exhausted already. He acted like he would have fallen down if he wasn't forcibly hanging on.

He heavily gasped as he staggered... It seemed... he truly was exhausted!

However, in his drooping eyes, there was only massive killing intent!

...

Chapter 568: Stalemate!

However, none of the enemies showed up from the dark. The suppressing power was still ongoing though.

Apparently, they wouldn't show up until Feng Monarch fell down!

They wouldn't take a risk that might lead to an unforgivable regret!

The poison beads of Feng Monarch was a legend that terrified everyone after all!

Whoever was touched by that dark fog, they would all eventually rot into ashes.

Feng Monarch had such a terrifying history, who dared to show up and stay beside him? It was not safe even staying in a distance. What if the wind blew the fog over?

That fog meant death to them all after all.

They would rather hold on longer than put their lives at risk. It was a joint honor of them all as a team, yet their lives only belonged to themselves. Now that they were occupying the higher position, they naturally didn't need to take any risk!

Ye Xiao stopped and kept gasping heavily. He held onto his knees, acting like he was nearly dead because of tiredness. However, his eyes were looking around.

It was a flat field there.

There were two small villages in distance. Further away, there was a long chain of small mountains. That was so normal around Chen-Xing City!

There was no place for him to hide!

Apparently, the enemies had investigated the landscape. They forced him here on purpose!

In fact, this was not the place they wanted Ye Xiao to stop. However, Ye Xiao believed they were more or less near the place they planned!

In fact, this place was better for the enemies to handle Feng Zhiling!

The suppressing power might be reduced in such a place, but it could keep Feng Zhiling from running away!

There were twenty-four cultivators above level eight of Sky Origin Stage. Even though their suppressing power was reduced a lot, they were still occupying the higher position. Feng Monarch was still too weak to defend against them, no matter how he

reduced their power!

As long as Feng Monarch didn't escape from their entrapment, they would win this battle for sure!

Ye Xiao was gasping, like he was really exhausted. He didn't move. It looked like any of the twenty-four guys could easily kill him.

In fact, the East-rising Purple Qi was running like a great river in his body, round and round boosting up!

Other than that, endless spiritual qi was forming inside the Space. It created a spiritual qi storm that raged in the Space from the bottom of Brother Egg!

As long as Ye Xiao gave a hint, the spiritual qi that was like an ocean would rush into his dantian. He would be filled up with energy within seconds. He would be in a full state like he was going to explode at any second!

The suppressing power was getting stronger on him!

The twenty-four guys had surrounded him!

Twenty-four masses of suppressing qi formed a joint array!

It kept tightening and squeezing!

[We don't want an instant kill. We just want to kill you slowly!]

[We don't need to show up! We can kill you even from a distance!]

[As long as you die, everything will be perfect. We don't need to rush!]

Ye Xiao took in a deep breath of spiritual qi, trying to convert it into a spiritual shield. He operated the first level martial art of East-rising Purple Qi to fight against the suppressing power.

After a while, his forehead was full of cold sweat.

Enemies were waiting for Feng Monarch to fall down, but they didn't know Feng Monarch was waiting too. He was waiting for them to show up!

As long as he figured out where they were, he could come up with a practical plan to control the situation!

Whether he would make a counterattack or a breakout, it would all be under his control!

He believed no one could have sharper eyes than him in this world.

As long as he could glance on those men, he would know which was stronger and which was weaker. Even a slight difference couldn't escape his eyes.

He just wanted those guys to show up.

[The moment they show up is the moment I start the counterattack!]

However, the suppressing power was getting stronger and stronger, but nobody showed up!

After a while of stalemate, the enemies had gathered more people! Four more men joined the twenty-four men! The power of the four new guys was the most powerful hammer to break the stalemate!

However, it was all Ye Xiao's acting! More enemies coming over and putting on a suppressing power on him successfully made it harder for him to bear, but it didn't lead things out of his predication!

Since the enemies had set up such a murderous trap, they would never keep their forces this time. Ye Xiao intentionally acted like he was trapped in a negative situation. First, he wanted to make the enemies show themselves. Second, he just wanted to push the enemies to make their last strike. As expected, they thought they were in an advantage, but they didn't dare to show up, so they finally used their last ace card!

However, with four more men to help, they still couldn't knock Feng Zhiling down.

It remained a stalemate!

[What is going on?]

The men of the two great sects were surprised. They had one conclusion about all this. [He truly is a powerful man. No wonder he could kill Bu Jingtian! Impressive!]

Ye Xiao had forced the enemies to put on their last group of power, but they still didn't show up. It was still a stalemate. He remained in a negative position, and that was not a good thing for him. He was a bit edgy, even though he was usually calm...

...

Ye Xiao was edgy, in fact, those twenty-eight men were even edgier!

They were totally shocked and provoked.

They couldn't believe it!

[What the fxck is going on here?]

Feng Zhiling had rushed along to this place like a shooting star under the suppression from them. That was already like a miracle to them.

Now, when he seemed to be exhausted, he actually successfully held it against the power of the twenty-eight men! He was actually hanging with it! He seemed quite capable from that!

[This is so tough! This is tough like hell!]

[He is absolutely a monster!]

...

Chapter 569: Lunisolar Glory!

Even if he was at the same level with the twenty-eight men, even if he was Bu Jingtian, he should have been pushed down on the floor by now! If he was truly that powerful, he might be able to break out the entrapment. He was obviously not as powerful as them! He was bracing himself forcibly!

[That is such a tough guy!]

Feng Monarch suddenly staggered under their watch. And then he angrily shouted to the sky, "Ahhh..."

They were all looking at him with expectation. As he shouted, his spiritual power that had looked like drying out actually rose again crazily!

Why again? It wasn't the first time it rose up! It was the third time!

"What the hell. He is using his origin capacity now!" A white-bearded old man looked solemn. "He first used the power he gathered inside his body. Then he broke his foundation to transform it into spiritual qi. This time, he is converting the energy of his life for the burst of spiritual power... He may be able to hold it up for a while, but after this, he will be drained out! In other words, we are winning this!"

"That's right! Let's be patient. Do not show yourselves. That man is so good at poisoning. We can't defend that strike. Do not take

any reckless moves. Keep suppressing him until he dies. That is the best way!"

"Yes!"

They all nodded to agree.

"This is the third time. I wonder how long will it take for him to hang on like this? We are holding quite a burden making the suppressing attacks too. Why don't we just use Lunisolar Glory and finish the fight quickly. As long as we don't show ourselves, what can he do with his poison anyway? The sooner the safer," one of them suggested.

"Good idea! Brilliant!" Some others around him nodded.

They spread the idea to the others. After a while, all twenty-eight knew it.

With a long and resounding shout, the twenty-eight streams of vigorous power suddenly changed!

That was an incredible change really. Before this, the twenty-eight streams of power worked together in separate ways. They just kept suppressing one after another. They were working together, but not really bonded into a wholeness. It was still very likely to find ways to defend them. At this moment, the twenty-eight streams of power bonded! Like rivers joined to the ocean! It became a monolithic mass of power!

Ye Xiao encountered such an enormous power. He felt much more suppressed. That was a much different situation now than earlier!

...

The only thing unexpected to Ye Xiao was this Lunisolar Glory.

That was something that could have actually killed him!

The Lunisolar Glory was a martial move of the two great sects joint attack!

That was surely powerful. In fact, it was unbelievably difficult to cultivate this martial art!

It had a basic requirement. Fourteen superior cultivators of Sunlight Sect and fourteen of Starlight Sect should work together, twenty-eight in total. It matched the twenty-eight stars in the sky!

The basic martial arts that were required for this technique were the Scorching Sun Martial Art of Sunlight Sect and the Starmoon Martial Art of Starlight Sect. The two martial arts together could create a splendid scene of the sun and the moon illuminating the earth!

The twenty-eight men not only needed to just practice it

together, they also needed to reach a thorough connection in their minds. That was the basic requirement for the cultivation of this technique.

To make sure it met the basic requirement, they had to stay together all year long.

Other than that, to cultivate this technique, they had to be living in the mortal world to feel the energy of kings. That would give them what they couldn't get for the Lunisolar Glory.

It was their shortage after all. It was natural!

The essence of this technique was to be performed by three streams of power. Three kinds of glows—the sun, the moon, and the stars—shining together in the sky!

The three glows of the sun, the moon, and the stars referred to three kinds of talented men—one for sky, one for earth, while the other for humans. Only by making the three glows and the three kinds of people perfectly bond together in the universe could it lead to a perfect strike, the Triple Glory!

The two great sects had collected whatever they could, but they only reached the stage in which only Lunisolar Glory could be performed.

After many years, the two great sects found that the shortage could be fixed, and they could possibly perform Triple Glory!

The star glow was needed. They could use the qi of the three kinds of people to fix the shortage. It was not literally qi though. It was actually the destined energy of the kings. They could use the destined energy of the kings to fix the shortage for that star glow.

Because of that, during the time they had been cultivating this special technique, these twenty-eight men had been hiding in the forest mountains outside Chen-Xing City. It had been fifty years since the two great sects started to cultivate together on this project.

They had never shown themselves even if they were so close to Chen-Xing City.

When the guys led by Bu Jingtian were all killed in the city, these men all knew by the next morning.

They knew what happened, so they decided to take revenge.

After some investigation, they surprisedly found that forty-eight top superior cultivators in the world including Bu Jingtian were killed in a short time. Bu Jingtian was killed by one palm hit by Feng Zhiling, the monarch of Ling-Bao Hall!

They reckoned that Feng Zhiling was too powerful to mess with. After several times of discussion and observations, they came up with a conclusion. The reason why Feng Zhiling could kill so many powerful man like that was that he had those poison beads, as well as those schemes in his mind. He was not so strong in cultivation,

so they thought that as long as they didn't get close to him and fought with him from a distance, they could defeat him. It would be easy to kill him once he was knocked down!

They had been hanging around near Ling-Bao Hall to make sure their plan went smoothly. They had worked on this trap for many times. That was why they wouldn't need to spend lots of time on the way...

Ye Xiao knew nothing about all that though.

He was taking the disadvantage that even he didn't know why!

At the moment, the twenty-eight streams of power bonded together. The energy could even shock the world. It smashed down onto Ye Xiao's head, causing him to feel greatly stressed!

He could barely defend it!

That was so unexpected. He nearly fell down and sat on the floor because of the surprise attack!

..

Chapter 570: Monarch's Burst!

Ye Xiao's eyebrow twisted. He felt that something went really bad. He had such a familiar feeling. At the same time, he felt hatred and hostility in his chest for no reason, like there was wild fire burning the entire land in it!

[The feeling of this...]

[That is...]

[It feels like... the martial arts of the three super factions in Qing-Yun Realm!]

[I felt it clearly when I was surrounded back to that day.]

[That's right. The two great sects were subordinate organizations of two of the three factions. I surely remember that.]

His eyes suddenly turned red!

[My brother... He should be even more familiar to this feeling!]

[But now he is dead!]

[And I am still fxcking alive!]

Facing the familiar murderous feeling, Ye Xiao suddenly shouted to the sky. His vigorous power was boosting up and up, breaking out the limit several times under those men's unbelieving watch!

He decided not to hide his capability anymore. He was raging with a burst!

Under the control of his mind power, the spiritual qi in his dantian started to pour out like tides! Spiritual qi immediately filled up the Spaces, and it was circulating all over his body!

Spiritual qi filled Ye Xiao up. He was full as if he would explode at any moment!

Killing intent and murderous qi crazily poured out from his heart! That was an imperial vigor of the residuary soul of Xiao Monarch from the previous life!

It burst out!

Ye Xiao's bended body suddenly straightened!

He stood there tall and straight, no more did he seem to be staggering and dying at any second!

Ye Xiao was now like a giant divine sword connecting the sky and the earth. It suddenly came out from the scabbard and stood between the sky and the earth, giving out sharp lights that would glow forever, overwhelmingly!

That dense aura of murderous qi flowed around his body and suddenly shot out in every direction like an explosion! It divided into one after another invisible sharp sword shooting out fiercely!

East-rising Purple Qi formed a defensive shield, and it suddenly moved backward a bit before it wildly marched ahead. The aura of a conqueror's murderous qi shined up with resplendence!

It shined up the world!

Ye Xiao was standing on the flat land with a cold face. He was like a conqueror of the heavens looking down on the weak mortal beings!

Coldness!

Indifference!

Frostiness!

Except that, he was solemn, splendid like he could slaughter the entire world!

Spiritual qi was gathering fast and crazily in his dantian!

It was raging!

It was rolling!

Ye Xiao could feel that he was consuming the spiritual qi in a rapid speed as he was making such a splendid vigorous power. However, it refilled even faster than it was consumed. His Jing and Mai were turning thicker and thicker bit by bit under such a strange situation.

He should be just in level five of Sky Origin Stage, however, at this moment, he was pushed to the middle phase of the fifth level. It was still pushing forward! He felt fulfilled!

"Ahhh!"

"What is going on..."

"Puff..."

"Pufff..."

At the moment when Ye Xiao started to get up vigorously, the twenty-eight men felt something extremely horrible for no reason. Suddenly, the vigorous power of the murderous qi smashed down on them like a descent of a conqueror!

At this moment, Ye Xiao was fighting the twenty-eight men on his own. However, his power of vigor had turned the losing

situation over. He was now in the higher position in this battle. He had pushed all the energy of the twenty-eight men backward!

Basically, Ye Xiao's real capability could not even bring him victory facing one of those twenty-eight men. However, they were in a fight of vigor! Ye Xiao's murderous vigor was from the soul of Xiao Monarch!

The energy of vigor of a Dao Origin Stage cultivator, Xiao Monarch, could vanquish even two hundred and eighty men, not to mention twenty-eight men. There was a gap of two spiritual dimensions!

Even though Ye Xiao only struck out a tiny piece of Xiao Monarch's soul, the murderous qi along with the vigor was still invincible in the world!

Besides, East-rising Purple Qi in second level was playing a big role to support the suppression.

The twenty-eight men might be able to conquer the entire Land of Han-Yang, but they were far behind Xiao Monarch, who had ruled the Qing-Yun Realm!

If they fought Ye Xiao face to face with the spiritual qi, it would be a different story. Ye Xiao had the vigor and will of Xiao Monarch, but not the cultivation capability that matched them. One could not make a fist with no hand. If this was a physical fight, even if Ye Xiao survived, he would be badly damaged for sure!

However, those men were so afraid of the poison beads, so they took the conservative way to start the fight.

What they got was to arouse the enormous hatred and hostility deep inside Ye Xiao's soul.

He didn't plan to do it this way at the beginning. He was thinking he would use a level 1 East-rising Purple Qi to make a vigor strike. He would make it a protracted fight and wait until those men were tired. After which, he would burst in energy to kill them one by one!

However, the extreme hostility that had been hidden so deep in his soul made him burst. That burst happened to take place when the men had just stricken out their most powerful attack!

That was such a tough counterattack!

The twenty-eight men had the same reaction. They felt extreme pain in their heads, and there were flashing lights in the eyes. They felt like a mess in their head and nearly lost their minds. Blood came out from their eyes, nose, mouth and ears. The weaker ones spat out blood and got serious damages inside their bodies!

Ye Xiao's counterattack contained dense killing qi. It swept out all that stood on the way!

Whoever were attacked all felt weak in their arms and legs. They felt dizzy. Their inner organs were seriously damaged. They had

lost the capability to fight within several seconds!

The counterattack made twenty-three of the men stagger and bleed in the head. Among these twenty-three men, seven were damaged badly inside and completely lost their capability to fight!

Only five of the men were fine!

However, they also felt a throbbing inside their heads when it burst. They couldn't hear anything...

After a while, they finally returned to themselves from shock and looked at each other, with faces of terror!

They realized Feng Monarch had been hiding his true capability. That was the moment when he finally unleashed his true power and burst out, making an end to the battle!

[No wonder he has been so cooperating all along. He simply took any way we picked. No reflections at all. It turns out he was so confident. He wants us all to be here, so that he can strike on us at one time.]

...

Chapter 571: Kill Back! Escape!

[With that capability, he should have been free for a long time. Besides, he even acted like he was struggling in exhaustion. What a trick. We are foolish. We even explained for him...]

[However, Feng Zhiling waited until this moment to make this counterattack. It led to great damages to us all. That means not only we want to kill him, but also he wants to kill us!]

They had the same thought.

However, they were seriously wrong about it... no matter how reasonable it sounded...

Because...

Before that, Ye Xiao had truly been forced to go as they wanted him to. That was not his plan. He was so much weaker than these men after all! To avoid being hunted in a siege, he had to follow their plan.

If he had to fight them at that moment, he would certainly be ripped off.

At the end, when he completely figured out their plan, he had what he needed to make his plan. He started to try to control the situation, without being noticed at all!

The key was the strategy of the twenty-eight men!

If they didn't fear the poison attack of Feng Zhiling, stopped the distant fight and got to him with a big physical fight, things would be rather messy for Ye Xiao...

However...

They believed that a distant fight was the best solution in this mission. After all, those who died before them lost their lives in a close combat against Ye Xiao. That was true! They were all knocked down!

How would they recklessly get close to Ye Xiao with such horrible examples?

Besides, who knew that there was a piece of soul of a murderous monarch hiding inside the man's body? Nobody knew he would have such... an overwhelming vigor!

That was less possible than bumping into a ghost in day time or men keeping their promises!

This and that, no matter how unexpected and unbelievable it was, it happened...

Everything seemed to be a setup of heavens. The twenty-eight men were really unlucky!

When Ye Xiao was making the counterattack while the men were shocked, Ye Xiao had flew up in the air like a mass of cyan smoke and then rushed out forward at speed beyond what everybody could see.

Seven needles showed up in his hand!

As he moved, the needles were rapidly shot out! -Shoot! Shoot! Shoot! -

He was quickly skittering over the land like smoke!

- Shoot! Shoot! Shoot! Shoot... -

The seven needles shot in the back of the heads of the seven most injured men and out from their foreheads. A slight drop of blood flew out following after the flying needle. The needles flew after Ye Xiao to where he headed after they were out of the men's heads!

The seven men were closest to Ye Xiao when he made the counterattack, so they were the ones who suffered greater injuries. They didn't have any capability to dodge at all. The twenty-eight of them were standing in distant spots, seven in a group, surrounding in the four sides. Even if the other men wanted to save these seven, they wouldn't be able to now.

Within seconds, seven lives gone!

Ye Xiao wanted to be sure that there was no missed attack, so he used the Demonic Weapons directly. After seven needles in and out, the seven bodies changed color in an instant... and then it started to rot and melt...

Ye Xiao waved his hand in the air and the seven needles flew back to his hand like birds flying back to their nest. While he did so, he was still skittering.

He was like a whirlwind blowing over the place where the seven dead men guarded, heading back to the city!

The twenty-one men were stunned. They hurriedly gathered over while shouting.

When the seven men in the east, those furthest from the dead bodies, came over and saw the seven rotting bodies, they were astonished. That was truly horrible and soul-kicking! "No... Seven brothers have been killed by Feng Zhiling! That bastard still has his poison. The bodies are rotting so fast... Heavens, that's horrible..."

Those were words with strong power!

Poison!

The three men who were rushing fastest ahead suddenly slowed down as they felt frightened.

[How? We didn't see any dark smoke...]

[How... How did they get poisoned?]

[Where did the poison come from?]

[Does he have any special skills to strike the poison out that we are not aware of? Does it mean he can poison a fixed target now? Silently?]

The deeper they thought of it, the more scared they felt. How did they go on the chase?

Ye Xiao skittered the land out hundreds of meters away. He then disappeared near a bush on the way.

The twenty-one men were also damaged. They didn't dare to chase Ye Xiao anymore. They were still frightened by the vigor counterattack back then. If a few of them caught up with Feng Zhiling, they would be killed mercilessly.

Besides, they thought Feng Zhiling had a super technique that could strike out poison silently...

They gathered around while looking at the seven dark colored bodies rotting quickly. They didn't know what to say. Some of them still had blood on the mouth, looking extremely horrible.

Fifty years hard work, they had been cultivating the Lunisolar Glory. Twenty-eight men honed into a super powerful array. Yet before it really did any achievement, some of them died!

A quarter of them died!

The Lunisolar Glory was broken!

That cruel reality really killed them in the hearts...

"What kind of bloody poison is this... How can it be so overwhelming..." They didn't dare to get close to the dead bodies. They just looked at them from a distance. Their eyes were twisting and trembling.

The bodies were rotting in a rapid speed. They could even hear the sound of rotting...

The next moment, a terrible smell spread out in the air...

"This Feng Zhiling must become our biggest trouble!" The white-bearded old man in front of them showed a solemn face. His eyes were contracting. The muscles of his eyes were shaking. "He and us are forever enemies! Life and death hostility! If we can't kill him, we will be stepping into long troublesome days in the future!"

"That's true!" The other twenty men nodded with solemn faces.

They all thoroughly felt coldness from head to toe.

...

Chapter 572: Horrible Enemy!

Back to a few days earlier, forty-eight superior cultivators started a fight against Feng Monarch, but all of them ended up dead. That shocked the entire world!

However, the twenty-eight warriors of the two great sects didn't really know what exactly happened. They got information from the assassins who survived the night when Feng Zhiling used his poison beads. They asked a few men from the noble clans about the fights. They then pictured an image of Feng Zhiling, a rough man with overwhelming cultivation capability, a strange and vicious poison master. He had used his poison to kill many men from different sects and killed everyone from the two great sects!

However, that was based on what they were told.

A story was usually exaggerated.

When they heard what people said about Feng Zhiling, they were disdainful.

[Strong cultivation capability?]

[Truth?]

[How strong exactly?]

[Pah!]

[They said he killed Bu Jingtian the senior elder with a palm hit. Who knows what tricks has he played? Maybe Feng Zhiling hid some secret weapons to plot our man!]

[I don't believe he is even stronger than us!]

[The viciousness and the poison stuff.]

[Humph. Since he can kill thousands of assassins with his poison and defeat our men, he is surely good at mastering poison. However, no matter how good he is in using poison and how invincible his poison is, as long as we stay from a distance, he wouldn't have the chance to use it on us. What use if he cannot strike it out?]

When they got the information, they didn't really care what it said about him!

They were right though.

In front of the joint power of the twenty-eight of them, nobody could defeat them!

Besides, they had the super technique, Lunisolar Glory!

They took actions very quickly, because they wanted to go back

and continue their cultivation on Lunisolar Glory after killing Feng Zhiling!

In fact, they had been really cautious not to underestimate Feng Zhiling. They went to Ling-Bao Hall to check everything including Feng Zhiilng's cultivation level. They set up the trap and left Feng Zhiling no chance to use the poison. They had predicted every possible move of Feng Zhiling!

However, they couldn't know that the perfect plan ended up a support for Feng Zhiling's trap! And they all fell in!

Their smart plan became the reason they failed!

Feng Zhiling had been enduring and enduring. He kept luring them until he figured out all the force they got and then he made the strike to turn over the situation!

They were all not going to forget the extreme horror Feng Zhiling brought by his overwhelming vigor!

That murderous qi had almost stopped their heartbeat!

That moment, the only thing they wanted to do was to kneel and beg for mercy.

If they were any weaker, they would have been pushed down on the floor and die while sh*tting and pissing!

Feng Zhiling moved after that vigor strike.

He moved like lightning.

One strike!

He killed seven of the twenty-eight!

And he just got away.

When he moved, he was like a lightning and a tsunami!

When he attacked, he killed!

He didn't stay for further fights. He just fled away. He had been holding the initiative all along!

After a while, the twenty-one men finally understood the truth. They all took in a cold breath.

What could they do to deal with such a horrible enemy anyway?

Feng Zhiling was such a nightmare to them!

He was a demon that they could never defeat!

"That man... is too horrible!"

"True. He is powerful and overwhelming on both martial art and poison. He has a deep and profound mind. I am sure he didn't know our plan at the beginning. However, he made a plan to make such a counterattack within such a short time. He was luring us to the dead end. It looked like we were dragging him over, but in fact, he was using us to break our plan. And we failed."

"That's true. His counterattack is so fierce and overwhelming. However, he was doing it under our suppression."

"Under suppression? If not... What would have happened?" One of them apparently wasn't quite reconciled.

It made them all fall to silence.

None of them said a word.

They only felt coldness from the bottom of their feet up to the top of their heads.

He kept defending them all along and that was all. What if he made the first strike?

The man who asked it was actually stunned by what he himself said!

Feng Zhiling was absolutely a pain in their backbone!

After a long time.

One of them said, "Know your enemy and know yourself. We only knew about ourselves. We did investigate on Feng Zhiling, but we were disdainful. Now we are defeated. I think this is reasonable. At least we know what Feng Zhiling is now. We witnessed the overwhelming poison strike of his, and we now know how cunning he is. We saw the vigor of him that wiped out everything, and we saw how fast he can move! He is truly difficult to be restrained by us. We deserve this! I am convinced!"

They all sighed.

That was right. After all, he actually defeated them all by casually playing around!

The man sighed and said, "The only thing I feel sorry for is that we didn't know what Feng Zhiling is like, not even after we lost seven men! The power we saw today, is it eighty percent, or fifty percent, or maybe thirty percent of his real power?"

They were all terrified by this thought.

That was right.

Feng Monarch had made them fall in great trouble, shocking them deep in their hearts. But, truth be told, he hasn't even shown his real power yet!

He had never fought any of them face to face!

...

Chapter 573: Overwhelming Power!

The power Feng Monarch showed was horrible and astonishing, however, it was absolutely not all he had. How much more powerful was he then? It was a question now stuck inside these men's hearts. Such a horrible man, Feng Zhiling, with much more horrible power!

That was a nightmare that couldn't be more horrible!

"When we were chasing him earlier, we thought that he had just entered the Sky Origin Stage. That was why we were so disdainful. That was the beginning of our failure, with blood and death! Such a horrible enemy, yet we underestimated him! How could we all survive? That was simply stepping to death!"

The old man spoke in a deep voice.

They all lowered their heads with shame. None of them could deny it. They were all disdainful back then.

"Under the influence of our underestimation, we were so sure that he must have been burning his soul energy or life energy to fly so fast."

The old man sighed to the sky. "But we ignored that no matter how strong one's soul is, or how big the life potential he has, he can never burst with the speed that even top level cultivators of Sky Origin Stage couldn't catch up with!"

"That was such a clear mistake we made! Apparently, we ignored such a big mistake!"

"That moment, we should have carefully reconsider it. We should have analyzed the situation deeper. We should have known that that man is an excellent capable cultivator who is not weaker than any of us!"

"One mistake leads to many! When he stopped, the twenty-eight of us came. We made that strike with all our power. That strike actually cut off our leeway! We were so badly damaged!"

"He was waiting for that! He waited and waited, until we finally made that attack!"

"He wanted us to bond our powers together, so that when he made his attack, we couldn't get away! That was how he could hurt us all at one time!"

"When we made that vigor strike, he made the reverse strike with his powerful vigor! Two masses of vigor power clashed! The stronger one won! No tricks could be played here. That is even more dangerous than a clash of spiritual qi! We thought we were winning the fight, but in fact, he was the one with confidence really. He won it all!"

"He was plotting this, and we were careless. We already lost there. After that crash, we showed many loopholes. Not to mention you guys, even I was blank at that moment. I believe you

were all at the same situation."

They all smiled bitterly and nodded to agree.

"He used the loopholes to make his killing strikes fast. He moved like lightning and used his invincible poison hit. Within seconds, he killed seven of our brothers and fled away."

The old man suddenly stopped. It seemed he felt something wrong about that.

"No. No, no, no. If truth is like you said, Elder Zhou, than Feng Monarch should be stronger than the twenty-eight of us together. If so, why did he run away? He made a perfect strike and occupied the absolute positive position. He just needed to stay and kill us all. Wouldn't it sweep his troubles forever? If he really is that strong, when our Lunisolar Glory was totally broken and we were all injured, why did he flee away?"

One guy realized the problem.

"There is only one possibility. Feng Monarch is powerful. He is so powerful that none of us can defeat him alone. That is why he could kill Bu Jingtian by one hit. However, he is not strong enough to fight us all together. Otherwise, he wouldn't need to flee."

"That is reasonable." Another guy said, "I even have this thought. At the beginning, because Feng Zhiling is powerful, he didn't really take us seriously. He just wanted to see what we were doing. The

entire series of things he did were just playing. Only when the two masses of great vigor power clashed did he show his true self. Since we were seriously damaged, he must be injured too. He might even be injured more seriously. Otherwise, he wouldn't need to flee away. After all, our Lunisolar Glory is no ordinary martial art. That strike contained the power of all the twenty-eight people. Even Elder Bu couldn't defend our Lunisolar Glory. So..."

"That's right! This is the most possible one so far!"

"To make a further conjecture, I guess Feng Monarch is suffering great trauma at the moment. He may still be able to fight, but he must be on the edge!"

"In other words, if we catch up to him right now, we will have a sixty percent chance to win!" A man spoke with a deep voice, "Feng Monarch knew he couldn't kill us. Well then, we have bigger chance to win this fight! That must be over fifty percent chance! That is something worth to do!"

Under the shock of such absolute power, these men actually changed the word when they addressed Feng Monarch. Even themselves didn't notice this.

When they called Feng Zhiling earlier, they would call his name or just call him 'bastard', 'prick', 'vile man', 'scumbag', 'motherfxcker'...

Now when they addressed him, they called him Feng Monarch! They didn't notice it at all.

The astonishing absolute power brought the change. A respected monarch that no one would abuse easily!

Facing such world-shocking cultivator, to freely use scurrility could only show impression of weakness. [We may hate him extremely, but we cannot deny that he has such world-shocking overwhelming power!]

[That is the most valuable thing in the martial world!]

[Powerful man gets respect in Land of Han-Yang!]

The old man with white beard looked at the seven dead bodies and finally sighed. "We follow special rules in urgent situations. Let's not wait anymore. There is no need... to bury the our brothers' bodies now."

...

Chapter 574: Maggots in Bones!

They glanced at the rotting bodies only to find they were melted to a pile of blood. There were no bodies anymore.

Even hair and bones were gone.

They looked at it and only felt sick and terrified.

What kind of poison was it?

So powerful! So overwhelming!

It didn't stop at killing someone. It actually melted the bodies into nothing!

Whoever was touched by that poison would absolutely die!

"Let's go get Feng Zhiling! Revenge!"

The old man with white beard was full of viciousness!

"Let's go!"

"Catch him!"

They were all gloomy, and they felt extremely sad in their hearts.

They started to go back to the city.

When they came, they came with spirit and vigor chasing their target. Now, they were going back with heavy steps.

They didn't even want to move their feet. They felt so tired that they couldn't lift their feet.

They were exhausted, from inside out, both mentally and physically!

Who could keep their vigor and high spirits when fighting an enemy like that?

[How easy is it to chase Feng Zhiling?]

[He may be seriously injured, but we are heading to his home court now. It is not our court after all. As long as he hides somewhere, how can we find him? When he shows up after recovery and we finally meet him, can we really defeat him?]

They eventually failed to catch up with Ye Xiao. That was the best chance they had.

The old man had a very good excuse for that though—to collect their brothers' bodies.

However, they all knew it was not true!

They all knew it. They just didn't want to say it out. That was embarrassing.

Men who were killed by Feng Monarch could never leave a full body! How to, as the bodies would eventually melt into a pile of blood?

The reason why they were so gloomy was simple. They were all frightened so badly by that lightning-like strike!

They just didn't dare to chase him!

No matter how many excuses they had, they couldn't hide from the fact that they were cowards, and they were scared by Feng Zhiling!

...

When they passed by the bush a few hundred meters away in a low speed...

All of a sudden!

Something flew over and the air was shaken!

The space seemed to be twisted by that!

The gloomy men were shocked.

What happened next was that the seven of them who were leading the way suddenly exclaimed and fell down on the floor. They started to roll and turn on the floor painfully...

Their skins and faces were changing color right away!

The others saw that and were all frightened. They moved away in an instant. Everybody drew out their weapons, and they all looked pale on the face.

At the same time, a figure rushed up from behind the bush like a white bird flying up to the sky. He waved his two hands and seven cold streams of light flew to his hand like rivers joining the ocean. One after another, the weapons all flew back to his hand.

"All of you are late! I have been waiting so long! You stopped when you needed to march ahead; you rushed ahead so fast when you shouldn't. With such capacity of decision making, how dare you set up a trap to kill me? I really don't know whether you are naive or simply fools!" the man spoke indifferently.

His eyes were like the eyes of a vulture, staring at them mercilessly like looking at his quarry.

Monarch of Ling-Bao Hall, Feng Zhiling!

He didn't fly far all the time. He had been hiding there.

Another strike, he took seven more lives!

The others were furious. "Feng Zhiling! You vile prick! Stop your plot and get down to have a real fight with me!"

Feng Monarch smiled in the sky. "A real fight? You? How dare you? I can play you to death casually!"

After that, he didn't do anything else but only flew away like a great rainbow. - Shoot! -

- Puff! Puff! Puff... -

The fourteen living men threw their weapons to the sky. Feng Monarch had gone hundreds of meters of distance again!

There was another bush a few hundred meters away! The men were staring at it!

Feng Monarch acted exactly like what he had done after he killed the first seven men!

The seven men who were hit just now started to exclaim while

rolling on the floor. They just kept moving for a short time before they all slowly stopped... They were dead, and their bodies started to rot and melt!

Poison again. Another seven men died!

The fourteen survivors were trembling. They wanted to cry except they didn't have tears. They were both shocked and scared. They were filled with different feelings, and they didn't know what to do next.

They looked at the brothers they had been living with for decades falling one after another, dying in such a nasty way. But, they just couldn't do anything to save anybody. They couldn't even take revenge.

[Feng Zhiling is cunning!]

[He doesn't want to fight face to face.]

[He just hides in the dark and plots us. Poisoning, ambushing, assassinating... He does everything. He is like maggots in the bones. You just can't get rid of it!]

Feng Zhiling was so powerful and he hid in the dark. These men had no chance to fight back at all. They didn't even have chance to survive the day! They could just wait and get killed one by one!

As Feng Zhiling said, 'I can play you to death casually!'

That was the truth!

Fourteen men looked at their brothers' bodies, weeping!

[There is still two hundred miles away from Chen-Xing City. Can we make it? The fourteen of us?]

That bush a few hundred away was shaking in the wind. Under the sunlight, it projected a shadow. The shadow was a cool and nice place for people under the burning sun. However, it felt like a devil in these men's eyes. An invincible devil opening the gate to the horrible hell!

The men looked at each other. They were terrified. Both physical and mental fear had driven them on the edge of breaking down.

Seven men were killed at once, and their opponent had done it twice.

How many times would he need to take care of the rest?

Suddenly...

"I can't take it! Let me die then! The sooner I die, the sooner I stop the fear... Feng Zhiling, why don't you come and try kill me too!" One of them crazily shouted. A mass of light that was so blue like an ocean burst on his body. He was bonded to his sword as he

rushed to the bush like a madman.

"Stop! Stop it! Do not be rash!" The white-bearded old man had grim expression.

However, it was too late to stop him.

...

Chapter 575: Apprehend Danger in Every Sound!

Because of the extreme fear and anger, that man who rushed forward had gone crazy. He was not only hot-headed. He rushed over performing human-sword mergence. As his sword light flashed, that bush was cut into countless pieces and flew up to the air.

That man didn't stop. He was still swaying and cutting with the sword. The powerful strikes didn't stop. It went back and forth, left and right. The sword was destroying everything...

Unexpectedly, although he had used up his energy to make the powerful strikes and reveal the loopholes of himself, nobody attacked him. Anyone, even weaker one, could easily kill him at that moment. However, the horrible enemy, who was terrifying like death itself, didn't attack him!

No instant kill?

The thirteen men behind were shocked. And then they finally realized it. They hurriedly rushed over to hold that man.

When they passed the place where the bush had been located, the area had become a big hole on the floor with nothing in it.

Feng Monarch didn't hide there!

They were shocked and scared.

[He isn't here, then where is he?]

[Has he finally taken leave?]

The fourteen of them didn't put down their swords. They performed their martial arts as they rushed over like the wind. Fourteen men apprehended danger in every sound. No matter where they looked to, they felt like Feng Zhiling was hiding there... They felt like every place was filled with killing qi...

They were so cautious all the way along. They nearly scared the sh*t out of themselves.

Surprisingly, it was peaceful the way along. Not to mention Feng Monarch, there was not even a rat.

They went straight to the gate of Chen-Xing City. Nothing had happened to them.

They were surprised and didn't know what to do.

Finally, they stood in front of the gate, gasping. They finally felt relieved. However, they couldn't get used to it.

It was like a dream to them that nobody was hiding there waiting to kill them. They were so surprised with joy.

...

The guards on the gate of Chen-Xing City saw the fourteen men with weapons in hands, standing there looking around like fools. They were confused, so they shouted at them, "Yo! Fourteen guys there! What are you doing?"

Not only the fourteen men would apprehend danger in every sound, the soldiers guarding the gate were the same. They saw some men with weapons in hands flying with a colorful glow. How could they not be scared!

These soldiers were not so experienced. If they were, once they saw the fourteen men with weapons in hands and flying with that blue bright glow that only superior cultivators in Sky Origin Stage could have, they should have already alarmed the entire Chen-Xing City right away!

The fourteen men heard the soldiers. They suddenly exclaimed as if they were terrified, then they turned around and ran away fast.

- Shoot! - They all disappeared.

The blue glow shined and then disappeared too.

A soldier at the gate murmured, "How did they move so fast... They can't be mutineers, can they?" Suddenly, he was enlightened, "What the fxck! That blue glow! Are they Sky Origin Stage

cultivators..."

Within just a second, that soldier was scared so bad that he was drenched in cold sweat with a pale face.

"Oh my god... That was close... If they came and killed me, they only needed to move a finger... And it would be easier than smashing an ant... Luckily they didn't..." And then he was confused. "A bunch of Sky Origin Stage cultivators were together. They should be invincible. Why would they run away? They seemed extremely terrified. The way they ran with fear... just what happened? What could scare such a group of superior cultivators like that? Is there any even stronger figures fighting against them?"

He thought deeper and deeper until he scared the hell out himself.

It became a question in this soldier's heart for his entire life. He couldn't figure it out till he died. Every time when he thought about it, he would be in cold sweat and felt lucky.

It also became a story he bragged to people, "On that day, I shouted so loudly... Fourteen Sky Origin Stage cultivators were scared the hell out and fled away immediately. Imagine how fierce I was..."

...

The fourteen men who survived were truly worried too much!

Ye Xiao didn't ambush them at all.

In fact, after that vigor power fight, the extreme murderous qi of the hidden soul inside Ye Xiao burst out. It surely brought great damage to the enemies, but also hurt himself in a great deal.

If not for the East-rising Purple Qi stabilizing Ye Xiao's condition and keeping his physical foundation from getting injured, Ye Xiao would be seriously damaged too. In fact, he would be damaged even more seriously than the twenty-eight men of Lunisolar Glory!

Even so, Ye Xiao was not in a good condition right now. His ears were buzzing, and his organs were like burning. It seemed like a mess inside his body. Seven apertures on his head felt itchy, like there would be blood coming out at any second.

The only one chance he could flee away was there. If he missed it, he would die for sure.

That was why Ye Xiao used up all the energy he had to strike out the needles. Luckily, he hit the right guys. The seven most wounded guys were killed by seven needles!

Ye Xiao rushed out immediately as he made it.

When he rushed out, he was badly out of energy. He tried so hard to move as fast as he could. It wasn't that casual like the men

guessed.

He was extremely embarrassed!

If he could casually leave that place, he would never leave. He would absolutely kill them all!

He never spared any vile enemies and gave them chance to revenge. He only ran away when he couldn't continue killing.

He tried so hard to strike out the needles, but only seven needles!

He couldn't just play them to death like he said.

If he could kill them at one time, he would definitely do it. Why would he play?

To fight against a bunch of Sky Origin Stage cultivators was a totally different story than to fight against some normal men.

If he was fighting normal people, he could shoot out over a hundred needles at one time! That would definitely kill a lot!

However, facing Sky Origin Stage cultivators, seven needles for seven enemies was his limit. That strike already took all the spiritual qi in his dantian.

If not for the pouring spiritual qi from the Endless Space, he might not be able to even stand firmly on the floor after the strike of seven needles like that!

That was why he fled away so decisively! No hesitation!

...

Chapter 576: Medicine Delivery!

When Ye Xiao rushed out, he could feel the weakness on his feet. The first thing he wanted to do the most was to go back to Ling-Bao Hall and recover. However, unexpectedly, that needle strike shocked those men immediately.

They actually stopped and surrounded the dead bodies...

[What the hell is wrong with these people!]

Ye Xiao did not care about what was wrong. He surely seized the opportunity to get away.

He absorbed a huge amount of spiritual qi from the Boundless Space and filled it into his Jing and Mai. His spiritual qi was refilling in a super rapid speed. After a while, it was mostly refilled. During the time it refilled, he was waiting in the bush for those men to gather around silently.

When they came near to him, he made another strike with seven needles. Seven men died in front of him. It was the same situation like the last strike. His spiritual power was drained up!

He still casually fled away like a while ago.

This time... he really did flee casually!

He directly went back home!

The two attacks were already his limitation!

Those men were definitely freaking out after the two unexpected attacks...

If Ye Xiao stayed there and did that once again, then he might eventually fail.

As such, he casually went home directly, leaving those men there, apprehending danger in any second...

All those bushes on the way that could hide in were destroyed by the fourteen Sky Origin Stage cultivators!

...

He ran so fast back to Ling-Bao Hall, finally feeling relieved while gasping.

The wind suddenly came over.

Ye Xiao was calm and steady, but he had just returned from great danger. He was frightened, so he turned around to find out what was happening.

There was a lady with white clothes standing there. Perfect shaped body, exquisite face, beautiful eyes...

It was Xiu of the Heavens, Xiu-Er.

"Oh? What happened to you?" Xiu-Er didn't understand why Feng Monarch was alarmed. She looked at him and he looked like he just came back from a long travel. She observed closer and felt a murderous qi after some fierce fight around him.

In other words...

"Did you just fight somebody?" Xiu-Er frowned; there was killing intent in her eyes.

In Xiu of the Heaven's eyes, Feng Monarch was the most important person for them. She would not allow anything to happen on him!

He was the key figure that decided whether her master could return to Human Realm Upon Heavens!

Whoever dared to try to kill Feng Monarch, no matter who they were, if House of the Chaotic Storms knew, Wan-Er and Xiu-Er would kill them all mercilessly!

House of the Chaotic Storm would even search for anyone who escaped that was relevant to it.

No further possible trouble would be left!

They just wanted everything to be safe!

They wouldn't even spare a dog... What if the dog bit on Feng Monarch? Xiu-Er and Wan-Er would worry. [What if the dog gave him rabies?]

That was why they wouldn't even spare a dog or a chicken.

Ye Xiao blandly spoke, "Nothing. I just met with some stupid thieves. I killed them. Nothing serious!"

Xiu-Er had such sharp eyes. She didn't believe it at all. She humphed and said, "Feng Monarch, we are on the same boat now. If you are in danger, if you need help, just tell us! No matter who they are, how powerful they are, what they have, as long as they are threatening you, we will kill them all! We can absolutely wipe them out, leaving no further troubles! I believe you understand that I would rather have things happen on me, than happen on you!"

A beautiful girl was speaking something like 'Kill them all!' 'Wipe them out leaving no further trouble!' with great killing intent. Ye Xiao just felt weird about it.

The last one, 'I believe you understand that I would rather have things happen on me, than happen on you' did amuse Ye Xiao. It

added a sense of shadiness somehow...

Ye Xiao knew what she thought, but he just couldn't tell it right.

After all, he had his pride.

He knew that if he told her about those men, he could solve the problem in an easiest way. He would be living in this world most casually and leisurely.

But he wouldn't tell her. Absolutely not.

[I will take care of my own business. I don't need others to help!]

[Besides, if my opponents are all killed by you, who do I practice my capability with? How do I boost my cultivation level? You don't know, but the fight today pushed me up from level five to level six of Sky Origin Stage directly!]

[The challenge of life and death is the most precious one...]

[You are not going to ruin it!]

"Don't worry, Lady Xiu-Er. If there is anything I can't solve myself, I will lead it to you without hesitation." Ye Xiao smiled.

Xiu-Er was a bit annoyed.

[I have offered my help so humbly!]

[You actually treat it like trash.]

[Why do you have to wait till 'you can't solve' and 'lead it to me'...]

[What does that mean?]

[What are you talking about!]

[That is so...]

Xiu-Er threw over a space ring. She humphed and said, "There are notes of ten billion silver inside it. Five hundred portions of materials for the dan beads. Three thousand jade bottles... We are collecting more medical materials around the entire Land of Han-Yang. By the day after tomorrow, I guess there will be at least fifteen hundred portions to be delivered to you..."

"You actually collected so fast?" Ye Xiao was shocked.

Xiu-Er and the other two had just left Ling-Bao Hall in the morning the same day.

It had been less than six hours, and she had brought back so many!

What efficiency was this?

That was astonishing efficiency!

"Efficiency has always been our thing from ancient days!" Xiu-Er said as she looked up to the sky with disdainful eyes. She seemed proud. "Anything in the Land of Han-Yang, as long as we want it, we can get it in the shortest time! We can be sure it will be done with best quality and good quantity!"

"Really?" Ye Xiao's eyes lit up. "I know House of the Chaotic Storms is powerful in fighting. Are you really that good at collecting medical materials too?"

Feng Monarch's eyes were shining, as if he was an extremely poor guy looking at a mountain of gold!

...

Chapter 577: Attraction!

Xiu-Er proudly raised her head up and spoke with confidence, "Absolutely! What? The truth is right in your eyes. Do you still have doubts on it, Feng Monarch?"

Ye Xiao rubbed his hands with shining eyes. He looked so excited and spoke with a bit embarrassment, "I believe it! I do! Absolutely I believe it! Oh, right! Lay Xiu-Er, since you are so capable, I guess I can just tell you whatever I need. Look. I need to ask for a favor. I guess it won't be a trouble for Lady Xiu-Er and the House of the Chaotic Storms. It must be a piece of cake. Easy like flicking a finger..."

Xiu-Er was shocked!

[Wait... Listen to him... I was just casually saying... Did I just make another trouble with my big mouth?]

As expected, Feng Monarch said to her with a full face of sincerity, "Look. You are so efficient in collecting materials. Can you... Can you collect some treasures and mysterious fruits too? Those are good materials for dan-making..."

Xiu-Er stared at this shameless man with her pretty big eyes!

She suddenly didn't know what to say.

At the moment, there were thousands of ravens crowing over her

heart.

"Heh, heh. I know. It is a bit embarrassing to bother you. But look, you said it yourself. It is a piece of cake for the House of the Chaotic Storms to collect materials. I guess it would only take you three or five days. Besides, if you don't go get these things, they would rot somewhere in the world anyway. What a waste!" Ye Xiao said while sighing, "If you can get them to me, what a great thing to do... For the country or for the people, the medical materials are blessings from gods."

"Men should make use of what they are given. Medicines should be used to help people. That is the right thing to do."

Xiu-Er gritted her teeth and said, "It is our own business whether we are good at it or whether we are efficient or not. Why should we collect those things for you? What good will it bring to us?"

"Look, Lady Xiu-Er, you are being unreasonably distant now. Consider our relationship. I am a dan-maker. I love treasures, precious materials, and marvelous fruits. It doesn't matter if they are poisonous. It's true..."

Ye Xiao said, "As a dan-maker, as long as I see these things, I feel happy. As I feel happy, I have confidence. As I have confidence, I make better dan beads in a faster rate... The faster I make dan beads, the sooner Master Bai will get his Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan. Don't you agree? However, if I feel bad... You know what I mean, don't you?"

Xiu-Er felt irritated.

She wished she could just punch him on the face!

[You bastard! That can't be more shameless...]

[Making dan, that is what you can! How dare you keep coercing me with that! Look how you act so shamelessly!]

[I haven't been threatened for who knows how many years! You just made the first case here...]

[Well but... Fine! I will stand it. For Master, I will stand it!]

"Feng Monarch, what do you need exactly?" Xiu-Er tried to hold the anger in her chest.

[I will just accept it... as long as he doesn't ask for anything too immoderate!]

"What do I need? Lady Xiu-Er, you are smart and pretty. That is just the right question. I am not a picky man. All I want are just ten thousand years old ginseng, ten thousand years old lucid ganoderma, ten thousand years old snow lotus, ten thousand years old multiflora, ten thousand years..." He counted it with his fingers, about forty ten-thousand-year-old materials.

[My heavens! That's not picky?]

"No!" Xiu-Er raged up.

[You see House of the Chaotic Storms as treasure gopher?]

"Oh, you can't get ten thousand years old materials? How about a thousand years? I am not that picky after all!" Feng Monarch wickedly smiled as he rubbed his hands. "The more the better."

"..." Xiu-Er gritted her teeth. She kept holding the anger down, and her face turned red because of it.

"Heh, heh... Well... Lady Xiu-Er, if you can get more of all these things, I won't let you do that for nothing." Ye Xiao looked at Xiu-Er's angry face and slowly spoke, "According to Lord Ling's saying, supreme dan beads should be rather precious stuffs in Human Realm Upon Heavens. Normal dan beads in supreme level like Bone Ablutionary Dan, Limit Breaking Dan, and Pei-Yuan Dan must not be needed. How about higher range dan beads in supreme level? What if I can give you a few supreme dan beads that can heal any injuries real fast in return... Maybe you are not interested in upgrading cultivation levels, but the fast healing supreme dan beads... high range dan... I guess you will need it sometime..."

Xiu-Er changed expression on the face, but she didn't say anything.

"In fact, the materials I asked for are for my own interest for sure, but also for you ladies... Look, for example, if you get me ten thousand years old snow lotus..." Ye Xiao blandly spoke, "I promise

you, before you leave this world... I can give you two high quality supreme dan beads. That is such a marvelous treasure that all women dream for."

"What kind of dan bead is it, that it makes you so confident about it!" The words 'all women dream for' motivated Xiu-Er.

"Agerasia Dan in supreme level! I wonder if that means 'marvelous treasure that all women dream for' in your opinion!" Ye Xiao slowly spoke, "Agerasia Dan in supreme level has no time limitation. As long as you take one dan bead, you can be ageless forever. You can keep your beautiful appearance for your entire life. How about that? Isn't it marvelous?"

"Deal!" Xiu-Er's eyes lit up!

They were filled with fever and eagerness!

That was true.

To be forever young and beautiful! To be in the perfect age forever!

That was not only marvelous for women, but it was also a magic spell!

Every woman would agree to the deal as long as somebody offered such a thing!

With happiness and high spirits!

No matter how difficult it was, she would do it with all she could!

Even Wan-Er and Xiu-Er were the same.

[When Master returns to Human Realm Upon Heavens, he must be a favored privileged man. Everybody will cluster around him! With his pretty face, wisdom, social position, and capability, all women will dream for him.]

[What would happen to us then?]

[I truly have no idea.]

[Women should never ignore this sense of crisis.]

[A woman dolls herself up for the man who loves her. When we return with Master, the only thing we have are nothing but the thousands of years history and our pretty face!]

That was why Xiu-Er surrendered right away when she heard what she would get after giving Feng Monarch those materials.

...

Chapter 578: He Isn't!

"Be quick on other medical materials too. Better quality, better quantity. You know what I mean." Feng Monarch smiled like a wolf that had successfully trapped a rabbit.

"I do. Relax. Materials from House of Chaotic Storms won't let you down!" Xiu-Er was confident.

And she asked, "The urh... The Supreme Agerasia Dan... Can you really make it?"

"What are you talking about. Since when did you hear a lie from Feng Zhiling. I made Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan already. Agerasia Dan is simple." Ye Xiao spoke with confidence, "However, Agerasia Dan in supreme level mostly depends on ten thousand years old snow lotus. If I can get it... it won't be a problem. If I have enough materials, it is simple even to make two for each of you. That means, the key is depending on you. You understand me?"

"I do! ... But I only need one for each of us." Xiu-Er humphed. She blushed and stared at Ye Xiao fiercely.

"Oh right. One for each... No need for more..." Ye Xiao was blank. He realized that it was a stupid idea.

A woman only needed one dan bead to stay ageless forever. What could they do with the rest if they got more?

"So a ten thousand years old snow lotus will make sure I get the dan beads?" Xiu-Er's eyes lit up. She had to ask again to make sure of it.

"Absolutely! Sure! Of course! You will!" Ye Xiao nodded and answered.

...

"Are you sure?" In the bamboo forest, Wan-Er looked at Xiu-Er with glistening eyes; she even spoke in a low voice.

"Absolutely! Sure! Of course! I will!" Xiu-Er nodded.

"So as long as we get him ten thousand years old snow lotus, we will get it?" Wan-Er asked.

"I guarantee! With the lives of my entire family!" Xiu-Er nearly swore for it.

"Excellent! ... Why are you so sure about it?" Wan-Er was happy, but still she asked.

"Feng Monarch is a shameless prick, but he thinks quite highly of his words. Besides, if he cannot make it for us, there will be no one in the world who can make it. After all, he made Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan successfully. Agerasia Dan shouldn't be a problem to

him!" Xiu-Er said.

"That's right. I believe it!"

"So how about those materials?"

"Let's collect them together! I will help!"

"Great!"

Their faces were shining, and their eyes were glistening while whispering.

Master Bai and Ling Wuxie looked at the two ladies whispering in the distance, like they were talking about some secrets. They were speechless...

They could surely hear the ladies.

They just felt speechless about it.

[He just promised you two Agerasia Dan beads. He didn't even give you anything. Look at you, how docile... Feng Zhiling is full of schemes. I guess he can easily make countless supreme dan beads with the materials you collect for him. And you think you will get a lot out of it...]

However, Master Bai and Ling Wuxie were both ignorant about women. They surely didn't know how important Agerasia Dan was for women! The two ladies would rather spend the last penny they had to exchange for the dan beads!

There was no reason for that at all!

In fact, Ye Xiao wasn't being greedy this time. If he could have thought about this idea when Su Yeyue's master Meng Huaiqing was there, he could use it to get a huge lot of resources from her, not to mention the ten thousand years old snow lotus!

Ling Wuxie and Master Bai looked at each other. They didn't think it was necessary to stop them anyway. Once they were back to Human Realm Upon Heavens, the two girls wouldn't have any chance to do things crazily like this. They decided to just let them be!

"I mean, Bai, when will you meet Feng Monarch?" Ling Wuxie asked.

"I will go meet him soon." Master Bai smiled, "Not now. Now... just let him get what he wants. When he sees me, I am afraid he won't just ask what he wants so freely."

Ling Wuxie was confused. "Why so?"

But he was a smart man after all. He understood just in seconds. "Oh. You see him as a good opponent. He treats you as his best

opponent too. He is never going to play such silly tricks in front of you. That makes him look weak."

"But he can still do anything he wants to us. You, the key figure, don't show up anyway."

Master Bai smiled. "That's right."

"However, he still needs to accumulate more... so I decided to put off the time we meet." He stopped and continued, "When he stops asking for anything, I will see him. It is just like you said. I need an opponent. If he is too weak, that will be boring. Sometimes, it is a pleasant thing to support the enemy!"

"Feng Zhiling makes the dan beads for me. He is supporting me in a great deal too!" Master Bai laughed.

And then he stood up and paced a few steps. Facing the falling sun, he smiled. "The Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan beads really work well."

He swallowed the dan beads as soon as the two ladies brought them back. After all, they were magical dan beads that only existed in the myth. No matter how bad they looked, he had to take them.

Ling Wuxie helped him to digest the dan beads when he just took them. He started to feel the magnificence of the supreme dan beads at the first second he swallowed them. The power of the dan suppressed down the energy of the divine punishment at once.

Mater Bai still couldn't use his spiritual power yet, but he could stand up and move around.

Feng Zhiling's Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan beads were all with the same marvelous efficacy!

"These Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan beads from Feng Zhiling are actually better than what we expected. It seems even better than the Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan beads in the myth." Ling Wuxie said, "Feng Monarch is a greedy person, but he is really good at making dan beads."

Master Bai smiled. "You are wrong. He isn't that greedy. You will know in the future."

Ling Wuxie frowned. "Hmm? Look what he did. If he isn't greedy, what does greedy mean?"

"Think about the things he did. He absolutely is [a man with clanking iron bones](#). How could such a person be greedy?"

Master Bai took a deep breath. "If I am not making a mistake about him... he will do something as return! When he returns the favor, I assure you, you will be astonished."

...

[1] It means firm and unyielding.

Chapter 579: Your Sister!

Ling Wuxie twisted his mouth. He seemed indifferent. "Don't do this to me. I don't believe it. Except dan making, I don't think he has anything that can surprise me!"

"I believe in my eyes. You will see it too, Wuxie." Master Bai quietly and firmly spoke, "You will see!"

"I have never made mistakes in recognizing a person!"

"Shall we bet?" Ling Wuxie twisted his mouth.

"What wager do you want?" Master Bai asked.

"Well..." Ling Wuxie humphed. "If I lose, I will give you one shop in the Star River Street. If you lose, you give me one drop of Star Tear. How about that?"

Master Bai didn't even hesitate. "Okay!"

"Deal?"

"Deal!"

- Clap! Clap! Clap! -

The two brothers clapped their hands three times and the bet was made.

They acted like it was just about one tael of silver.

Whoever knew what they were giving on the wager would definitely be astonished!

A shop in Star River Street was a ready source of money in Human Realm Upon Heavens that everybody wanted!

Who owned a shop there would absolutely be rich!

Even generals who were loyal to the East Heaven King couldn't get one casually!

The Star Tear was an extremely precious treasure. Whoever was fed by one drop would improve eight thousand years cultivation experience. It might not be easy to digest in a short time, but it would steadily remain in the body. Whoever took it would never burst in explosion because of its enormous energy!

It was the most valuable thing in the East Heaven. Only a tiny amount could be produced in the East Heaven, none in all other places in the universe. It was only for people in the royal house. For others, not to mention taking one, to see one in person was already an extremely lucky thing!

These two wagers were both priceless, however, these two guys

made the bet so casually.

"We should keep this a fair deal though. You can't let Feng Monarch know!" Master Bai looked at Ling Wuxie. "And you can't do anything to influence him! No tricks!"

Ling Wuxie was surprised. "What do you think I am? Am I really that vile to you?"

"What do you want me to think you are? Aren't you this vile?" Master Bai humphed and disdainfully looked at Ling Wuxie. "You really think you have any good reputation here?"

Ling Wuxie was upset. "Can you not stick on my shortage. I just did it one time all my life..."

"One time is more than enough..." Master Bai humphed. "In the Land of Han-Yang, I learned something. To see a three years old child and know what he or she will become. I think that is pretty true. No matter when, even one billion years in the future, I will never forget what you did that time!"

He disdainfully looked at Ling Wuxie. "[Your sister!](#)"

"My sister?"

Ling Wuxie was stunned and speechless.

"One should never make such a mistake." He nearly cried, "Especially to a bastard like you. Once I was caught by you, my entire life is doomed..."

The reason why he was always so inhibited in front of Bai Chen was the two words Bai Chen said.

‘Your sister!’

However, it was actually Ling Wuxie’s female cousin!

Long, long time ago.

They bet on something once. Master Bai lost it.

It was a simple bet though, the kind that young lords usually did. Whoever could make the most distant lady in the realm smile by saying one sentence won.

Whatever was said, it should be one sentence!

Ling Wuxie won the bet.

He naturally took half a drop of Star Tear from Master Bai. Bai Chen was seriously punished by East Heaven King because of this!

After experiencing the half drop of Star Tear, Ling Wuxie had it

on mind constantly all times after.

Master Bai couldn't understand why he lost though. That pretty girl was known as an extremely distant beauty. How did Ling Wuxie so easily move her? Nobody had ever seen her smile for all those years!

He thought it was just a game they played to kill time. He believed no one would win the bet. It turned out Ling Wuxie won! He just couldn't believe it.

Bai Chen had worked so hard to figure out a joke and told that lady. Everybody was laughing like crazy when he told that joke.

Except that girl!

The cold face of her didn't even change a bit!

Ling Wuxie just went over and said with a wicked tone, "Hello, beauty... Am I not handsome?"

The girl smiled...

And then... end of story. She smiled. The bet was over. Bai Chen lost. Ling Wuxie won!

That was still an extremely unreasonable thing!

Bai Chen unbelievably lost it!

He couldn't understand it though. Why would that girl smile for just that simple and low taste sentence?

After he was beaten up by his father, he went to his mother for the answer. Meng Huaqin beat him up one more time.

That was not because he lost the Star Tear...

"You idiot! She is Ling Wuxie's cousin! She knew what you were doing in advance, you fool... You actually accepted it! If you won, that would be truly unbelievable!"

"You idiot! How could you just make a bet without know everything you need! What can you complain about? I am not angry because you lost the Star Tear, but because I have such a stupid son..."

That was a world cracking hit that time!

Ling Wuxie suggested that bet at the first place...

[Cousin?]

Bai Chen burst in anger...

He nearly exploded his belly because of the anger inside...

When he went to Ling Wuxie's home and prepared to beat him up, Ling Wuxie said something that cool it down instantly. Ling Wuxie plausibly spoke, "I mean, whoever makes her smile wins, right? That has nothing to do with who she is and whose cousin she is at all... Right?"

[Well lucky me, I have such a cousin. What a shame she is not your cousin!]

Ling Wuxie played such a trick that Bai Chen remembered deeply into his bones.

He got beaten up so hard that his ass was nearly split apart. It haunted him so bad and when he just felt better, he got beaten up on it once again!

That was extremely painful. The pain went into his heart and deep into his bones!

That was so unbearable!

Even though they had become best friends, Bai Chen was still holding a grudge for it. Ling Wuxie felt a bit guilty for it too!

Whenever they were having a quarrel, no matter who was right, as long as Bai Chen said the two words, Ling Wuxie would have nothing to say.

Those two words were exactly ‘your sister’!

The two words here were much more incisive and fierce than any rough words!

...

[1] This mostly means ‘screw you’ in English, but literally ‘your sister’ in Chinese.

Chapter 580: Precautions!

With the five hundred portions of materials, Ye Xiao went home as soon as he could.

He believed the two great sects wouldn't dare to mess with him at least in the next few days. Even though they wanted to, they couldn't. Even though they possibly could, they weren't bold enough!

When he got home, he saw Bing-Er sitting in meditation in the room.

The white long sword was on her knees right now.

The girl had been extremely diligent these days!

She was improving so fast, even Ye Xiao felt stressed because of her speed!

Since Bing-Er knew that there were people doing all evil things to capture women, since she heard that beauty was a sin... she was so devoted to practicing martial arts. She could even risk her life for it! She seemed to be trying to push herself to high level in an impossible short time!

It was obvious that she was improving greatly. Within a few days, she had already reached level five of Earth Origin Stage!

She was now rushing to the sixth level!

If one could get fat by swallowing one bite of food, she must be even faster than that!

...

When she woke up from meditation, she saw Ye Xiao sitting in front of her. She was so happy that she rushed into Ye Xiao's arms.

Ye Xiao was lost in thoughts though.

[It is surely a good thing that Bing-Er improves so fast.]

[But, as she improves, she needs to go out and practice in the real world after all. When that day comes, I may not be around her. Can she really take care of all those unpredictable things...]

[I have to make precautions for that.]

"Bing-Er, come. I am giving you something." Ye Xiao brought out a ring. "Put this on."

Bing-Er looked at the ring and she liked it. "What is it? A jewelry? Beautiful!"

"It is not a normal jewelry. I will teach you how to use it." Ye Xiao

explained its usage to Bing-Er. Soon, Bing-Er knew how to use it. The small ring could actually contain all the stuffs she had. When she wanted to take it out, it was out. She was surprised and happy.

She was so happy about it and kept playing with it.

- Clatter... - She made a mistake and all the things in that space ring poured out.

However, it didn't cause any damage.

When she was going to put all things back into the ring, she suddenly stopped. "What is this?"

Dozens of different size jade bottles.

There were different kinds of supreme dan beads in each bottle.

"How come there are so many dan beads?" Bing-Er shouted and looked at Ye Xiao with widely opened eyes. "Master, I can't accept it."

"Why not! Just take it. Take them all!" Ye Xiao stared at Bing-Er's eyes. "Remember, Bing-Er. Sometimes, you will be alone out there. You must try to keep yourself safe."

"These are high ranged dan, Mystery Spirit Dan in supreme level. There are fifty of it in these few bottles. Only one dan bead can

make a person beneath Dream Origin Stage recover in seconds when he or she is out of energy."

"Even people in Dao Origin Stage only need three dan beads to recover one third of their power..."

"These ones are for healing injury. It can save lives... marvelous efficacy..."

"These ones should be used when you want to break through a new level... Limit Breaking Dan..."

"These are..."

"And these are..."

"Remember what I just said about every kind of dan. When you face someone who is much stronger than you, do not force yourself to fight. Try to escape. There are long days to come. No need to end it in a hurry. If you are not fast enough to get rid of the enemy, you can take this... This dan can activate your potential and make you become extremely faster. But remember, after taking this dan, you will be weak for three days before your body recovers to normal status..."

Ye Xiao patiently explained everything to Bing-Er.

He didn't notice that Bing-Er's eyes had started to be filled with tears as she listened to him. At last, she cried, "Master..."

She held him in her arms tightly!

He had given her over a hundred dan beads that were more than enough for her to deal with all kinds of situations.

That was thorough!

Bing-Er's heart was melting.

She held Ye Xiao so hard. She was touched and pleased. She murmured, "Master, I am not going to leave you. I want to be with you forever... I won't need these dan beads..."

"Silly girl, I don't want to leave you too. But things are unpredictable..." Ye Xiao sighed and gently rubbed her hair. "Silly, you will take charge of yourself for me alone someday..."

Bing-Er cuddled in Ye Xiao's arms with tears in her eyes. She looked at the ring on her finger. She seemed lost.

Suddenly, she was enlightened and shocked.

She thought, [If I am going to be away from Master sooner or later... if I have to get in the martial world... it is said there are always dangers in martial world. One who steps in the martial world can never get out. Maybe I will die someday because of an accident... And I won't be able to see Master again if I die...]

[And... besides...]

[Urh...]

As she was thinking, she blushed. She was bashful about what she thought of.

[I will never take this ring off in my life!]

Bing-Er made up her mind.

With all the new medical materials, Ye Xiao started to make dan beads again.

This time, he decided to just make Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan. It was the most important one after all. He should get it done first before working on other businesses. The materials he had were now mostly from Xiu of the Heavens. Even though he wanted to get something else, it was too costly!

Besides, he knew Brother Egg would produce dan beads while it was absorbing spiritual qi from the medical materials. They were all in supreme level, however, he didn't know how it did this. He didn't even know how many materials it needed to make the dan beads.

The last time, it took one thousand portions of materials to make

three Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan beads. It made only three, because there were too many other materials in the Space that affected the process of Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan. However, it was certain that it was impossible that one portion of materials could make one dan bead. It must consume most of the materials. Brother Egg absorbed much power from it too. If one portion of material could be made into one supreme dan bead, that would be strange!

Brother Egg might go mad again this time, so Ye Xiao only put in one portion of materials.

He then waited patiently...

..

Chapter 581: Personality; 'Eggality'!

Nothing happened in the Space though.

Brother Egg stayed on the plate, not even moving a bit!

Apparently, it wasn't quite satisfied with the medical materials that was put in just now. [You threw over such little things, and you want me to make a dan for you with it?]

[What? Am I like a beggar to you?]

[Go on with your dream, you fool...]

Ye Xiao was speechless.

[Bastard. I am testing you... I don't know the bottom line beyond which you will make dan beads. I just don't want to waste things. I am your master. Come on. Show me some respect. One portion of medical materials is still materials!]

[... Well, it is just a little indeed...]

So he threw in ten more to test it.

Brother Egg still didn't move a bit. There wasn't even spiritual qi moving around.

It seemed Brother Egg totally didn't put such a small amount of low-level materials in its eyes. It didn't want to waste its time to do worthless things.

[How greedy, Eggy!] Ye Xiao was upset. He then threw one hundred more into it.

This time, Brother Egg moved. The spiritual qi in the Space rolled up.

Ye Xiao was surprised with joy. He thought it worked, however, Brother Egg stopped moving soon and the spiritual qi stopped too. Everything returned to silence...

It was still on the plate without moving.

Ye Xiao raged up, "Damn it! How dare you play tricks with me! This is it! No more! You can either absorb it or you wait for death after all spiritual qi is used up!"

[You dare to be a poser to me! You must want some real fights now!]

Before he finished talking, the wind blew in the Space all of a sudden. - Shoot! - The medical materials in the Space all turned into ashes.

- Dang, dang, dang... - Some supreme dan beads dropped to the plate on the floor...

Ye Xiao was stunned!

It wanted to absorb the materials all the time. It just wanted more. That was why it kept holding it. If Ye Xiao said those words earlier, Brother Egg would have done it already...

Ye Xiao wanted to cry. [An egg played games with me and I lost. Fxck the egg...]

The materials were not in best quality, but in good quantity. Materials Wan and Xiu collected were old, so the spiritual qi they contained was in a great amount. Brother Egg quite enjoyed it.

Ye Xiao didn't participate in the absorbing process. The spiritual qi came out from Brother Egg's lower part and entered a circular loop...

When the Space returned to silence, Ye Xiao entered it.

The first thing he did was not to check the dan bead. He went over to Brother Egg and slapped it. "You bastard! How dare you do that to me! You really need some thorough beating, don't you! Are you going to betray me..."

Brother Egg didn't just sit still. It kept shaking with its fat and round body.

A stream of its mind came out. "Mi, mi, mi, mi, mi, mi, mi..."

It seemed happy and proud, meaning, [If I didn't do that to you, could I possibly eat that much? Only fools work for nothing. Do I look like a fool to you?]

Ye Xiao was speechless. It seemed it was not completely a good thing to him that Brother Egg could talk to him. It knew how to sneer now.

He looked to the plate below Brother Egg. He was surprised!

Supreme Dan!

Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan!

Colorful, splendid, with dragons and phoenix, clouds...

When the clouds were gone, he took a closer look.

What he saw... one, two, three, four, five... eleven!

That was such a surprise!

It cost him one hundred portions of materials and only produced eleven dan beads, but Ye Xiao couldn't be more satisfied now! How

could he not be satisfied? Those were supreme dan beads. Not ordinary supreme dan beads, but the most valuable dan that only existed in the myth!

He used one hundred and eleven portions of materials in total. That meant he could make one dan bead out of ten portions roughly. That was a marvelous number. He was unbelievably efficient already!

Not to mention in the Land of Han-Yang, even in the Qing-Yun Realm, even in the Human Realm Upon Heavens, even in the entire universe, there might be no other dan makers who could have such a success rate!

He put away the dan beads one by one into the jade bottles Xiu-Er gave him. There were more than three thousand bottles from Xiu-Er. Apparently, he should use one bottle to keep one dan bead...

How could Ye Xiao waste things like that though!

He was quite rich, but he knew how to perfectly make good use of things!

[Well... One jade bottle can roughly contain one hundred dan beads, I guess!]

In fact, he wanted to use only one bottle to keep the eleven dan beads. However, he eventually used three bottles.

Eleven plus one that was left from the first time, that was a total of twelve dan beads, four for each bottle.

"They should give me a bigger bottle..." Ye Xiao murmured, "What a waste!"

Getting out from the Space, he threw in the rest three hundred and eighty-nine portions of materials...

Brother Egg crazily started to absorb again.

It seemed not so happy when it was absorbing. [Why did you do that. I won't steal things from you anyway... Why did you play that trick on me... What do you think I am... Can't you trust my moral personality?]

[Humph! You skimp my pay...]

"Humph. God knows whether you would steal or not." Ye Xiao fiercely spoke, "But you are right about one thing. I never see you as a person. You are just an egg. What personality do you have? You only have an eggality!"

Brother Egg teared up. It digested the materials even faster. It was turning grief into strength...

Over three hundred portions of materials, it produced thirty-six beads!

That was close to expectation.

It was quite close to the number Master Bai wanted...

Only about a dozen short!

Ye Xiao felt relaxed!

He had a feeling that there must be something brutal happening, since Master Bai so eagerly wanted these dan beads. If he couldn't give Master Bai enough dan beads in time, Master Bai might stay in the Land of Han-Yang forever...

That was terrible.

That was why he decided to send that guy away first!

...

During that night...

Before felling asleep, Ye Xiao sat in meditation as usual. He did it everyday.

Bing-Er seemed troubled. She stayed around Ye Xiao and kept checking on Ye Xiao, wanting to know whether he was asleep yet.

Ye Xiao saw her blushed face. He didn't know what she was thinking. [I really don't know what the girls are thinking. Why is she checking on me like that? What does she want?]

He couldn't think it through, so he looked to Bing-Er.

Bing-Er looked right into Ye Xiao's eyes. She suddenly acted like a panicking rabbit as she rushed away with a blushed face.

...

Chapter 582: Sleeping Master...

"Little girl!" Ye Xiao shook his head and smiled, and then he went on with his cultivation.

It lasted till midnight when he finished the first round of cultivating. He felt massively improved after that. He believed he only needed a few more days of accumulation to break through level six of Sky Origin Stage.

He felt good about the fast improvement. He was relaxed and prepared to go to bed.

Since he was reborn, he had been much more concentrated in cultivation compared to his previous life!

Xiao Monarch was already a crazy cultivation-obsessed man in his previous life.

Yet he worked even harder in this life. He used every spare minute to cultivate, not even wasting any second.

Dying in failure in the previous life made him understand that no matter how powerful he was in cultivation, it was always not enough!

There was always realms upon realms!

A man could never be truly invincible!

Beyond the Land of Han-Yang, there was the Qing-Yun Realm.

How many realms like the Land of Han-Yang were there in the firmament? How many realms were like the Qing-Yun Realm?

Would there be Bai-Yun Realm? Lan-Yun Realm? [Other realms](#)?

Human Realm Upon Heavens was beyond Qing-Yun Realm. What realm existed beyond Human Realm Upon Heavens then? Would there be higher realms?

That was unknown. He had no idea.

However, one thing could be sure. Any ordinary cultivator in the Qing-Yun Realm could defeat a great amount in the Land of Han-Yang, even conquer the world. Song Jue, Steward Song, was a vivid example. He was definitely an unbelievably strong figure in the Land of Han-Yang.

However, if he... well, if he fought against Ye Nantian, Ye Xiao's father, who was in Dream Origin Stage, he would be easily punched down. Ye Nantian only needed to do something like flicking his finger to put Song Jue down. However, he was no higher than second range cultivators in Qing-Yun Realm. That was all. That was the difference!

There was a huge gap between upper and lower realms!

That was a certain thing.

Was there a much higher realm with more horrible figures up there?

Who knows?

Since there was realms upon realms, there should be people upon people!

How powerful should he become to be invincible in the firmament?

Ye Xiao knew that it was never powerful enough!

There was no invincibility!

Martial art is infinite!

He was just at the beginning.

Any superior cultivator in the Qing-Yun Realm could kill him easily!

Not to mention people like Gu Jinlong, even those who were just as powerful as Ye Nantian could easily kill him!

How could he not work hard to an extreme extent? How dare him not?

In others' eyes, he might have already been unbelievably improved fast. However, it was never enough for Ye Xiao himself. He didn't look down upon himself. He was just well aware of the reality!

He put off the light and lied on the bed. He ran back over all the things that happened in the past few days, things he had done and things he was going to do. When he made sure he had thought of everything, he finally felt sleepy...

At this moment, sounds of random little steps sounded. It was getting closer and closer. That was Bing-Er walking over to him.

Ye Xiao kept his eyes closed, listening to Bing-Er stepping over as if she was a thief. [She even holds her breath?] Ye Xiao tried not to laugh. He didn't move a bit; he just kept his eyes closed, like he was deep asleep, waiting to see what the girl wanted to do...

In fact, he was so unprofessional in pretending asleep. He didn't snore, but that was fine. He didn't even keep his breath steady. If the girl wasn't naive and ignorant, she would never be fooled.

She was getting closer and closer to the bed. The sweet smell of a young girl was getting closer too.

She even held her breath, trying not to make any sounds. She seemed observing Ye Xiao's face carefully, also hesitating about something.

Suddenly, she opened her mouth and took a deep breath. She seemed rather nervous at the moment...

Ye Xiao as confused. [What is wrong with this girl? What is she doing?]

The next moment, he felt that the quilt on him was lifted up a bit. The quilt was shaking. It seemed Bing-Er's hand was shaking and she couldn't control it.

The next moment, she took in a deep breath. It seemed she had made up her mind to do something..

And then Ye Xiao felt that a soft, warm and sweet-scented body enter into the quilt...

He suddenly quivered.

He lost the last bit of sleepiness at once.

The room was so dark since he had prepared to sleep. He didn't use Yin Yang Eyes. That would be stupid. That was why he hadn't noticed that Bing-Er actually...

He felt that she was... smooth... soft... [She is naked?]

He finally realized it. Suddenly, the blood in his body was all awakened...

Bing-Er was so naive and innocent. She actually didn't notice anything wrong about Ye Xiao. Well, that was reasonable. She was already so bashful at the moment. She was biting her own lips as she made up her mind to sneak into Ye Xiao's quilt like a mermaid.

She was stiff while staying inside the quilt beside Ye Xiao. She moved a bit in the quilt to get a more comfortable position. And finally, her body loosened up.

And then she kept moving her head up. Hmmm. She pushed it too hard when she rushed into the quilt. Her head was below the pillow...

She moved her head up and kept her head on the pillow carefully. She then felt relieved; she lightly clapped on her chest and murmured in a low voice, "That was scary... I nearly scared my heart out... Lucky it didn't wake Master up..."

Bing-Er blushed and her face was like a red apple, completely ripe.

She deeply felt bashful about what she just did. Her heart was beating rapidly.

...

Qing-Yun means Cyan Cloud; Bai-Yun means White Cloud; Lan-Yun means Blue Cloud.

Chapter 583: Who Is This?

Bing-Er's heart was beating fast. [Why did I do such a shameless thing? Getting into a man's bed at midnight, naked... This man is Master, Brother Xiao, but...]

[This is embarrassing!]

[Why hasn't he waken up though? He has always been sensitive. Did I move too gently? He didn't feel anything? That could be true. I was being really really really cautious after all!]

She bit on her lips and tried to turn up. She stared at Ye Xiao's face. It was dark, but she seemed to see the calm and pretty face of her master. He was breathing steadily, as if he was deep asleep.

She stared at him, wanting to touch his face, but she didn't dare to.

She wanted him to wake up, but she didn't dare to face the moment when he woke up...

She just stayed there and stared at him while biting her lips. The boldness she had earlier was completely gone. She suddenly didn't know what to do anymore.

"I... I guess I should just go back..." She was panicking and talking to herself. Apparently, that was the only thing she could think about.

And then she confirmed her idea. She was about to get off the bed...

At this moment, something happened. The 'sleeping' Ye Xiao murmured something and then moved his arm and held onto her body.

- Pah. -

A gentle sound.

His warm and big hand tapped on Bing-Er's slim waist.

She quivered and then her entire body became stiff. She slightly opened her mouth and looked at Ye Xiao.

[Hmmm? He isn't awake? He did that in sleep?]

[I guess it was just a coincidence?]

However, her heart was beating so hard like thousands of horses were running over.

At this moment, Ye Xiao's hand slipped on her waist and touched her skin.

[Maybe he felt something?]

Bing-Er thought, [Maybe he is thinking ‘what is it that I am touching’?]

[Absolutely. Otherwise, why would he move his hand like that while he is asleep? On my body!]

Her face was burning red.

[His hand... Why... Why did it slowly move down and stop on my... hips...]

It touched her hip and then stopped there...

As her private part was being touched, she became more stiff. She didn't dare to move, not even breath.

Her body was trembling...

Ye Xiao was breathing steadily and calmly...

[Still sleeping?]

After a while, before Bing-Er calmed down, Ye Xiao groaned and moved. He actually turned, then his face was so close to Bing-Er now! Their noses nearly touched each other. They could even

smell the breath of each other.

His other hand was actually... touching her chest...

And his leg was actually... on her waist...

[No, no, no...]

[Now, I can't get away even if I want to...]

She regretted right away. She looked down and saw his leg buckling on her slim body tightly...

She panicked, and then she operated her martial art to calm herself down. However, it didn't work. The only thing that helped was that she could see things now. However, what use of it now?

[What should I do now?]

Bing-Er's mind was a mess. She had no idea what to do.

[Hmm? Why is Master slipping down? He was a bit taller than me...]

When she was thinking, she felt something touching her lip, warm and moist.

She couldn't move. The only thing that came into her mind was,
[Master is kissing me on the lips...]

[That...]

She kept moving her head backward to avoid it, but the 'sleeping' master seemed quite determined. He kept getting closer and put his lips on hers...

Bing-Er felt like her entire body was burning. She started to gasp. Martial art didn't help her a bit. She opened her eyes, thinking, [What should I do? What should I do?]

However, she had no idea what to do. She couldn't think of anything!

It lasted for a while, and she started to feel strange on her own body...

She tried to lift Ye Xiao's leg but failed...

She was really panicking. She didn't even think about using martial art to lift that leg. If she did, even five Ye Xiaos could be lifted up high. However, she didn't use martial art, so she could never move Ye Xiao's leg away.

She didn't realize it though; she just kept trying... Suddenly... she felt something moving on her lips.

She trembled and felt that... his tongue was moving neatly into her mouth...

[Hmmm? Is... Isn't Master asleep? Why is he doing this then?]

Bing-Er looked at his eyes, but his eyes were closed. He smiled, like he was having a sweet dream... He kept his mouth on hers, and kept moving his tongue neatly into her mouth...

[What?]

And then she thought, [Oh, he isn't awake yet...]

She tried not to let him in, even moving her tongue to stop him. However, he was so determined. The tongues touched together, moving round and round...

Bing-Er felt lucky that even under such circumstances, he still didn't wake up... [He must be really tired today...]

Gradually, Bing-Er felt her body burning hot. The pretty face of her master was becoming more and more attractive to her...

She was lost in it. It seemed she couldn't resist it anymore...

[He is sleeping after all. Only once. I will just take advantage of him only this time!] Bing-Er thought and then opened her mouth

to let him in.

She was enjoying a strange feeling. Her tongue stopped to try to work with his...

This time, when his tongue touched hers, she trembled. And then she was totally lost in this romantic kiss. She even turned more and more energetic...

He didn't move...

Bing-Er's arms held Ye Xiao's body tightly while trembling. She pushed her tongue back to his mouth. Insensibly, she was completely in his arms now...

[He is still sleeping?]

[Not awake yet?]

...

Chapter 584: Like-minded

[Master is sleeping. He doesn't know. I have taken advantage of him. I should take more.] Thinking about that, Bing-Er was getting bolder and bolder. She kept using her tongue to kill the man she loved...

#...#

[What...]

Bing-Er looked up in a panic. She looked into a pair of profound eyes. The eyes were filled with smiles, also a sense of fever, looking back at her...

"Ah!"

Bing-Er exclaimed and moved her head away. She was so bashful. "You... When did you wake up? What did you see..."

She was panicking. [How long since he woke up? He should have just woken up. He knows nothing... He knows nothing...]

However, Ye Xiao's answer broke the last hope of her. "When did I wake up? I wasn't sleeping at all!"

"Ah!!!"

Bing-Er exclaimed and bashfully covered her face.

[He wasn't sleeping? He knows everything? He knows that I took advantage of him... Ahhh... So embarrassing...]

Ye Xiao wickedly looked at her. "I saw with my own eyes... a pretty girl... entering my quilt... at midnight on her own initiative... What's in your mind, girl?"

"You... such a vile guy! You are so annoying!" Bing-Er covered her face and cuddled into Ye Xiao's arms, murmuring bashfully.

Ye Xiao laughed. In his warm chest, Bing-Er could clearly feel his heart beating along while he laughed.

She cuddled in his arms like an ostrich. She didn't even dare to open her eyes because of the shame. She was even a bit angry. [Humph! You were awake... You were awake! Bad man! Bad man!]

Ye Xiao realized she didn't speak anymore, so he smiled in a wicked way. "Oh, why do you stop talking? Where does the female molester who has been touching me go? Is she going to deny the fact after all the dirty works? My body used to be clean and blameless!"

Bing-Er felt extremely ashamed hearing that. She punched him on the chest and said, "You are so annoying!"

[How could you call me that with your hands still moving on...

my... You took all the advantages and you speak like I took advantage of you. Heavens. Where is justice. Why not just strike on this lying satyric guy by lightning!]

Ye Xiao turned over and got on top of Bing-Er's body, ignoring her scream. His eyes lit up with fire of wickedness. "Little girl, I did want to have you so soon... But... You ask for this... You ask for it, you take it..."

Bing-Er's face was red. She moved her face away and didn't dare to look into his eyes. She said, "Humph, I didn't ask for it..."

"Well that is too late now!" Ye Xiao forcibly lowered his head, declaring his occupation on this beauty...

Bing-Er felt like she was melting. She was soft like a pile of sweet mud... She closed her eyes, gasping, feeling her entire body burning with heat. The hands on her seemed to activate some special sensation of her body...

That strange feeling was brushing her sensation away like storms...

Until...

#...#

"Hmm..." (Author's note: To avoid being banned, thirty million words were abridged...)

...

After a long time, Bing-Er felt like she had died for dozens of times, until it finally finished...

Clouds cleared off and rain stopped...

Ye Xiao looked at the gorgeous beauty under his body. All he felt was happiness.

[This is my woman!]

[She is the first woman I have in my life!]

In the process, Ye Xiao felt a strange cold energy inside Bing-Er's body. As he moved more inside... the cold energy in her body was fading away. That energy made Ye Xiao felt so strange, but he felt it was familiar. Was it an illusion?

As the cold energy faded away, another pure energy rose up inside Bing-Er's body moving to his body and then returning to hers...

He lowered down to kiss the girl, who was too weak to even move a finger. He felt satisfied and then fell asleep on her body.

Bing-Er was already exhausted, so she fell asleep even earlier...

...

She had a dream.

In the dream, there was a woman with a beautiful face staring at her. In that woman's eyes, there was a strange expression...

Ye Xiao also had a dream.

He had never had such a sweet dream since he was reborn. It was like poetry, deluding him to folly, making him enjoy so much as to forget to leave...

They woke up late the next morning.

Bing-Er woke up first. She felt heavy in every part of her body. She felt it was hard to move. [Master... He is still on my body...]

She thought of the madness the previous night and immediately blushed. She couldn't be more bashful.

She pushed Ye Xiao, but couldn't push him away. When she wanted to push him harder, he opened his eyes.

He was looking right back at her.

"You are awake?" Ye Xiao looked at the beauty beneath him.

#...#

Bing-Er opened her eyes with panic. "Master... What... you..."

#...#

(Author's note: thirty million more words were abridged...)

#...#

...

(Author's note: This chapter has been abridged... Please forgive me.)

Chapter 585: Windfall

When Ye Xiao got up and dressed, it was already at noon!

Bing-Er was like a pile of sweet mud lying on the bed. She couldn't even move a finger again... Embarrassing for her...

She even thought about grabbing the quilt to cover the body, but she was too weak to do even that. She could only look at Ye Xiao, using her eyes to ask for it.

Ye Xiao smiled and again, then he did something really bad on her beautiful body, until she was groaning with pleasure. Then he put the quilt on her, and left the room with satisfaction.

Bing-Er was gasping. She felt extremely exhausted, both mentally and physically.

"That is so... tiring..." Bing-Er was nearly unable to speak. However, her eyes were filled with happiness.

As she was lost in thoughts, that beautiful lady dressed in black showed up in her mind again, staring at her with anger in the eyes! Bing-Er suddenly trembled. She was a bit scared.

She felt a bit guilty somehow.

And then she made up her mind and murmured, "I will never

regret!"

"I will never regret in my life!"

The beautiful woman looked at her, stunned. After a while, she sighed and then disappeared.

Bing-Er realized it was gone, so she felt relieved. She then fell asleep, tired both physically and mentally.

...

When Ye Xiao just went out the door, he saw Song Jue with a dark face.

"Ahem. Uncle Song," Ye Xiao gave a fake smile and greeted him.

"Slept well?" Song Jue humphed.

"Hmm. Long peaceful night without dreams. I slept the night through. It has been too long since last time I had a sweet sleep like this," Ye Xiao said and gave an answer that he wouldn't believe himself.

Song Jue didn't believe it too. "Well. Good. Long peaceful night without dreams, huh. The house was almost shaken down! Without dreams? Slept tight?"

Ye Xiao was embarrassed, but he played tough. "Oh? Was it an earthquake? I slept too deep. I didn't know!"

Song Jue glared at him and left.

[You are really good at playing a fool. Well done making up excuses.]

...

Ye Xiao disguised as Feng Zhiling and went to Ling-Bao Hall. He was thinking about those men who tried to trap him and kill him. He wanted to figure out a way to solve the problem once and for all...

And then he saw Xiu of the Heavens coming to him.

"Feng Monarch... You seem quite healthy today?" Xiu-Er looked at Ye Xiao with admiration. "Look at you. Even your eyes are filled with satisfaction... I guess you have good news?"

Ye Xiao coughed and said, "Yes... That's right. Big achievement."

Xiu-Er was happy to hear that. "How many? Lots of Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan beads right? Two? Three? Five!!!"

Ye Xiao looked at her. "Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan beads?"

He was thinking, [I did make many of that, but that is not the achievement I said...]

[Humph. Fine. I am a man with my own woman. I no longer have a common topic with this stupid girl...] Ye Xiao was thinking. He had experienced something real tasty the last night. He just couldn't help staring up and down at Xiu-Er's beautiful body.

"What are you looking at?" Xiu-Er felt that he was being a bit scampish, so she was alarmed.

She needed Feng Zhiling's help at the moment, otherwise, she would punch the shxt out of Feng Zhiling for the way he looked at her!

"I am looking at... I am just trying to have a guess on how many materials you brought to me." Ye Xiao looked calm. Apparently, he had become more shameless after the last night.

"Humph..." Xiu-Er humphed and said, "You are just a money-grubber!"

She casually threw over a ring.

Ye Xiao grabbed it and checked it as soon as he could. There were many medical materials for making dan beads, and also many other treasures. He was surprised.

There were also many jade bottles... Most surprisingly, he found

over a dozen meteorites from outer space...

"The meteorites..." Ye Xiao asked.

"All yours." Xiu-Er casually spoke, "House of the Chaotic Storms has plenty of that. They are useless for us."

"Oh? Really!" Ye Xiao laughed. "Great to hear! How many more do you have? Are there any other special metals? You don't need them anymore. Why don't you just give me all of it! Give me all! I won't dislike them!"

Xiu-Er was speechless.

[Why can't I just shut my mouth? I am really a squandering girl!]

[Among everything I can speak of, why did I... have to talk about that meteorite? I said we have plenty of it? Heavens! What was I thinking?]

[Well done now. He is going to take a huge advantage of us again...]

[Anyways, those things are meaningless to us.]

[I will just give him all.]

Xiu-Er was quite different with Wan-Er in personality. Wan-Er was soft and thoughtful, while Xiu-Er was careless and casual. If Wan-Er was there, she would bargain with Feng Monarch even though the things had no use for her. She would save a lot and sell them and then give the money to her people. She wouldn't give everything to Feng Zhiling.

However, Xiu-Er had a different thought. [There are still hundreds of billion in the House of the Chaotic Storms. That would be far more than enough to look after our men. The stones are heavy and stupid... They are really useless. It can be a big trouble selling them too. Just give them all to this guy. We should see him as a garbage collector...]

[Maybe he will work a lot harder in making Agerasia Dan for me.]

She then just waved her hand and generously said, "Why care about those stupid stones so much? You are really ignorant. We have never placed them in our mind. There are less than ten thousand pieces. All yours. I will bring them all next time!"

Ye Xiao nearly passed out because of the surprise.

[Less than ten thousand?]

[So... there are more than nine thousand?]

[Nine thousand pieces of special metals?]

[My heavens... Ahhhhhh!]

[I am drowning in happiness...]

"Lady Xiu-Er, you are so generous! Female hero, exactly your reputation!" Ye Xiao put the thumbs up and laughed like a fool. "Since you are so generous, I won't hide. As you said, I did make a lot good stuffs yesterday. Here you are, Lady Xiu-Er. Six Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan beads!"

"Six? That many?"

Xiu-Er was so surprised, but not to the point of passing out. She nearly jumped up though!

They got only two the last time after using up so many materials, but there were six out of only five hundred portions!

Six!

It had only been one day!

Xiu-Er was shouting excitedly in her mind!

It wouldn't take half a year to finish all the dan beads they wanted!

It could be done within just a month!

However, what she didn't know was that Ye Xiao actually had over forty beads with him. He just didn't want to shock her too much.

...

Chapter 586: Unbelievable!

"Feng Monarch, you are indeed a genius dan-maker! Xiu-Er should admire you sincerely!" Xiu-Er held the Heaven Seizing Dan beads. She was so happy that she just praised him turgidly.

And then she frowned. "Wait. Why only two bottles? I gave you thousands last time..."

Ye Xiao spoke as a person of high morals, "Frugality is a virtue. Lady Xiu-Er, listen, it is not a easy to run a home. Only to keep fragility, one can..."

He didn't even finish it when he realized Xiu-Er had disappeared.

[I hate sermons!]

Xiu-Er was speaking in mind.

[Finally, she took leave! Sermon is a fantastic way!]

Ye Xiao smiled.

[She showed up and disappeared without a sign. That is so annoying. I might explode at any moment.]

[But... Hmm? It seems something has gone wrong?]

He was counting the things he just got from Xiu-Er, but he suddenly felt something wrong...

[What is it that makes me feel so weird?] Ye Xiao frowned badly.

After a long time.

"That's it!" He was enlightened, then he clapped his hands, "When I saw Xiu of the Heavens, I would feel suppressed, even though we wouldn't fight and I knew there was no danger. That was my instinct and her natural vigorous power."

"However, I didn't feel that today!"

He stood up and thought so hard, "Why didn't I feel it? That should be my instinct! Besides, she is never a friend to me. She could never really be someone who admires me... We are just having a cooperative relationship."

"She didn't hide her vigorous power."

"Why did I feel it wrong... Unless..."

Ye Xiao thought about it and his expression changed.

He told the guards not to let anybody disturb him and then walked into his room.

He sat in meditation and started to operate his martial art to check inside himself.

The only possibility was that he had been greatly improved!

However, even though he had just cultivated the last night in quite a good speed, it shouldn't be a great improvement...

He quietly operated the martial art. The moment when East-rising Purple Qi was operated, he was stunned!

In his Jing and Mai, there was a stream of howling spiritual qi. He couldn't believe his own eyes!

[That... Is this real?]

[What... Why? What happened?]

Not that he was easily scared, but the situation was greatly beyond his recognition. The spiritual power of East-rising Purple Qi was so dense than it had ever been before. It was surging more and more, nearly reaching the middle of the second level, Purple Qi Descends!

As long as it reached that point, his East-rising Purple Qi would definitely rise to the middle stage of Purple Qi Descends!

"How is this possible?" Ye Xiao clearly remembered the last time when he reached the second level of East-rising Purple Qi; there was just a little purple spiritual qi in there. The spiritual qi was pure, but there was very little. However, he suddenly felt it filled with spiritual qi!

[Within just these days?]

[Is it even possible to be improved so much?]

The power qi of East-rising Purple Qi was a completely different thing to the spiritual qi in daily cultivation. It was a totally different concept to the level system of the levels like Sky Origin Stage and Earth Origin Stage.

They were two totally different concepts!

The two kinds of energy were both spiritual qi that produced by cultivation. They might be from the same source, but in totally different power sources and power capacity. One who reached Sky Origin Stage was admirably in the top league in Land of Han-Yang, and also could be three ranged league in Qing-Yun Realm; not qualified enough to be a superior cultivator up there, but not that weak. However, that was just at the beginning phase of the first level in East-rising Purple Qi.

There was a huge gap between the two level systems, out of people's imagination!

Ye Xiao couldn't believe that he had been improved so much. He tried to transfer the normal spiritual qi of ordinary cultivation. - Crack! - He felt his bones cracking. A pure energy rushed up in an astonishing speed to his head and then rushed down to his feet. The knots in his body that hadn't been broken through were all broken by that energy! He didn't feel any resistance at all!

[Oh my heavens!]

[What the hell is going on?]

Ye Xiao was living his second life. He had reached Dao Origin Stage in his previous life, however, he had never experienced such a crazy fast improving rate!

The spiritual qi was growling like thunders. Ye Xiao was feeling it. The pure raging spiritual qi suddenly burst up and broke the boundary to the sixth level of Sky Origin Stage. However, it didn't stop yet... It was not just non-stop... It was forever burning. It was so energetic and suddenly went through the entire sixth level. It kept rushing round and round in the Jing and Mai.

After a few seconds, it had already cultivated for nine circular rounds.

The energy inside him produced a new mass of spiritual qi rolling up in his dantian. Suddenly, a new energy was formed. It seemed even more powerful in breaking through the bounds of cultivation stages. It kept rushing up to the seventh level in an extremely fierce way!

The entire process continued without Ye Xiao doing anything. He just activated the martial art at the beginning and that's all. He didn't even push the spiritual qi yet. He just stood there and felt the spiritual qi bouncing in his body. He was really like an onlooker...

In Ye Xiao's opinion—he had reached Dao Origin Stage before after all—there was only one possibility for this situation. The spiritual qi in his body had been filling up to a level that it would explode if not to break through the bounds of higher levels.

That was very possibly the current situation.

However, he didn't know why. [Why is this happening?]

[There is no reason for this!]

Basically, if there was really that much energy holding up in his body, he should have been exploded to death for a long time.

It wouldn't wait till he operated the martial art and motivated the spiritual qi to break the bounds!

However, the impossible thing was happening. He didn't die in explosion. Moreover, he didn't even feel anything about the bursting qi. He completely felt nothing!

Chapter 587: Heavenly Spiritual Body

Oh, it didn't meant that he couldn't feel anything. He definitely felt comfortable and pleased for the warm stuff that happened the last night!

As he was making random guesses because he couldn't understand what was happening, the raging spiritual inside his body rose up and broke the boundary of level seven of Sky Origin Stage! He burst into another level!

That was such a sweeping and unaffected upgrade!

Under the brush of such apure spiritual qi, it had no reason not to break through fast!

As the new level was broken up, the spiritual qi kept rushing up, filling up the entire seventh level just like what happened when it was in the sixth level. It rushed over for an entire cultivation circulation and then kept going round and round until it finished the ninety-nine circulations. Suddenly, it fiercely raged up from his dantian again!

Ye Xiao was stunned. He couldn't believe what was happening in his body. There was still a mass of powerful energy rushing towards level eight of Sky Origin Stage!

It was still sweeping and unaffected!

There was a stream of cold energy in his body. It suddenly melted into pure purple spiritual qi and joined the energy that rushed up to break through the level boundary!

That cold energy was really overwhelming. It was so overwhelming that even Ye Xiao couldn't imagine it!

He was suddenly enlightened. He thought of the stream of Yin qi getting into his body while he was 'bodily communicating' with Bing-Er.

"Could it... be? But... How can it be so much? That is..." Watching the spiritual qi running out endlessly, he totally lost his words. He really didn't know what to say about that.

It was so astonishing!

A gifted girl got improved greatly after a few months of cultivation. That was reasonable. However, the Virgin Energy was actually... so massively powerful!

That was such an unbelievably strange thing!

- Boom! -

With a burst in his body, the boundary of level eight was broken too!

It took him only a short time to weirdly break the bound!

The only feeling Ye Xiao had right now was that, he must be dreaming!

It was such a big sweet dream!

Things couldn't be so good even in dreams, could it?

Cultivators had to suffer a lot on the path of cultivation. There were so many people spending their entire lives to break through one boundary after another, even geniuses!

However, within only one day... No...

Specifically it was within two hours, he upgraded three levels!

In the Sky Origin Stage!

The reason for all that was what he did with Bing-Er in the last night...

"That... That is... marvelous..." Ye Xiao opened his mouth. Poor guy only kept praising it, but he didn't really know about what happened. "No wonder so many guys are moaning for wives... It brings such good things... Uncle Song has been urging me to find a wife and stop the life of a virgin. He did really care about me. I wronged him!"

If other cultivators heard him, they might very possibly spit on him.

Even if Song Jue heard him, he would be indifferent too!

To get married or not had nothing to do with cultivation at all!

In fact, no other girls were like the female monster he had...

There were some guys who took advantage of girls for the yin energy. Even if they could catch a pure yin attribute girl, they could never gain such improvement like Ye Xiao did...

Not even one millesimal of that!

Ye Xiao was totally stunned. He just felt the spiritual qi was rushing up again and again, bouncing inside his Jing and Mai and refilling it again and again...

Ye Xiao was totally astonished by this miracle!

Finally... when the spiritual qi filled his dantian again and was about to break through to level nine, it stopped the rush.

It became like a pond of spring water!

It was flowing in Ye Xiao's Jing and Mai quietly and peacefully.

The peace and the burst were two extremes. Everything was cooled down like that crazy burst had never happened.

In fact, Ye Xiao had experienced some stunning changes in his body!

He took a breath out. It was finally finished.

He really felt relieved about it. If the spiritual qi directly broke through the ninth level, it meant he had broken the limitation of this world. That would be a huge trouble.

If that happened, he would have reached the level beyond this realm's boundary. Should he leave or not?

That was a tough choice for him to make right now!

Luckily, he didn't have to choose yet. At least, he wouldn't need to consider it. He needed to think about it sooner or later, but not so soon!

He wanted to move his body, but felt something wrong about his mouth. There seemed to be something covering his lips. He touched it, and felt that some powder was falling off his face.

Suddenly, it happened on every part of his body. First the palms

and then the arms... He felt uncomfortable on all parts of his body.

He looked down only to see his entire body covered by a layer of fine powder. It was like dandruff covering his hands, arms, and all the other parts.

It was in brown color.

He didn't know what was going on. He tried flicking it off and it fell down off his skin. It revealed his skin that looked like smooth jade!

His skin and muscles were actually changed. They were just like some exquisite jade, crystal and glittering.

"Thorough body remolding. Ablution of muscles and bones!"

He took a long breath out with relief.

He felt relaxed when he saw the weird situation on his body. In fact, he was quite familiar with it as he had experienced it a lot!

However, he hadn't gotten through the last level yet, but the ablution process had been completed in advance.

After this, his body became a Heavenly Body!

In Qing-Yun Realm, it was called Heavenly Spiritual Body. Only when one's body became Heavenly Spiritual Body could he start the cultivation in Spirit Origin Stage!

That was why it was called spiritual body.

When the Heavenly Spiritual Body returned to original simplicity, it started the cultivation in Dream Origin Stage. That meant... the Heavenly Spiritual Body was like a dream. When the body was returned to its original status, there would be no trace left.

That led to Dream Origin Stage.

...

Chapter 588: The King's Visit!

Bu Jingtian was powerful in cultivation. He had been over the limit of Sky Origin Stage for a long time, however, he had never taken the step forward, so he never acquired the Heavenly Spiritual Body. That was why he couldn't reach the Dream Origin Stage in his life. What a shame!

However, Ye Xiao became Heavenly Spiritual Body before he reached the limit of Sky Origin Stage. That was so different between one and another!

"That is such a fast progress!" Ye Xiao took a long breath.

Actually, he had been looking forward to this moment. However, he thought that it would take him at least one year to reach such a level no matter how hard he worked and how lucky he was.

In fact, one year was actually an impractical and extravagant hope!

However, unexpectedly, he just made it so easily. One step into the heaven!

"I must work harder on the girl tonight. Maybe it will help me break through a few more levels!"

He clicked on the tongue and thought about it. He knew it was not right to think so, but he just couldn't stop it.

As he thought of it, he felt burning hot down there. He nearly couldn't hold it and jetted... that... out!

He hurriedly operated the East-rising Purple Qi to calm it down. That successfully suppressed it down.

"They said men mostly die on women's belly. That thing... You just cannot get it out of your mind... It truly is..." Ye Xiao giggled. His face looked so wicked at the moment.

The next moment, luckily, he returned to normal, and he started to think about the business in Ling-Bao Hall.

It had been a few days since the reward warrant was sent out. There was no news coming in yet.

Those assassins were all cautious ones. Before they did it, they would do many works such as checking possible locations, putting watchdogs, getting intelligence, checking landscapes, and planning retreat. They had to be fully prepared before they made the killing strike!

After all, what they were doing now concerned the rests of their lives. None of them dared to be careless!

Because of that, Ye Xiao was quite free and leisure these days.

...

While Ye Xiao was in Ling-Bao Hall...

A group of people crowded to the gate of the General Ye's House.

The blood guards reported to Song Jue inside. Song Jue was shocked and then confused.

"The king comes for a visit!"

Song Jue was blank. [Big Brother isn't home now. Why does that old king come?]

However, Song Jue was the most exalted person in the house now. He had to go out and greet the king.

Surely, he didn't put the king in his heart at all. Even when his cultivation hadn't recovered, he never truly respected the King. Now, he absolutely wouldn't need to. He was shocked because he didn't expect the king would come, but the great Steward Song would never be scared!

In fact, if the king knew about Song Jue's true capability, he should be the one scared!

"Your majesty, what can I do for you?"

Song Jue politely bowed, led the King to the inner hall, and then asked in a low voice.

The king asked Ye Nantian to be sworn brothers himself. Surely, he was quite familiar with Song Jue, as Song Jue was Ye Nantian's brother too. The king didn't see him as a steward. He didn't feel offended when Song Jue talked to him like that. Instead, he felt it so casual and comfortable. He frowned and said, "Nothing serious. Too many things happened recently. I am bored. Just want to have a leisure chat with somebody. I looked around the capital. There is barely anybody to whom I can really talk with. Brother Song, you are a special one. I just want to come and check on you. It's hard to find a moment of leisure in a busy life."

Song Jue thought, [He knows who I am. That's fair. But we are not close enough for him to come and have a close chat with me.]

[He must be here for something important.]

Song Jue was ready for what would happen. [Before Second Prince died, he did come here.]

[I can't lie about that.]

[When he left this place, his entire family got wiped out.]

[House of Ye is surely under suspicion.]

[But... So what? Even if I tell him the truth, so what?]

General Ye was playing a powerful and important role in the war. Song Jue didn't really care about what the king thought.

[If I am pissed, I can kill all your sons, not to mention just one. What can you do to me though?]

The scorching fire of anger was raging up in Song Jue's heart.

He didn't notice the four martial artists beside the King were staring at him with astonishment.

They could never imagine that the king would be so polite to a steward of Ye Nantian!

The king acted like he and Song Jue were equals in this kingdom!

[Is this steward an outstanding figure too?]

Master Sun, the strongest martial artist among the four looked at Song Jue up and down, with confusion in the eyes.

The next moment, the king told the four of them to get away. He wanted to have a private talk with Song Jue.

The four guys were hesitating. They were not sure if it was right to leave him. The king smiled and said, "Look. If he wants to kill me, he could easily kill me a million times. Since he hasn't tried to

kill me even once, he won't now... Just get off."

The four guys walked out humbly, but kept observing every movement in the room.

They were gone.

The king looked at Song Jue and said, "Brother Song, I am here to ask you about something. Please tell me the truth."

Song Jue blandly spoke, "Your majesty, just go ahead. I will tell you whatever I know."

"I just want to know, that day when Second Prince came here, what did he say? What did he do?" The king didn't look at Song Jue. He was looking at somewhere else.

Song Jue blandly spoke, "That day when he came, he wanted to recruit Xiao Xiao. He wanted somebody from House of Ye to stand on his side. That is all. It is reasonable. The three noble clans have been killed by the two great sects there after all. The three princes returned to an equal starting line, so it is not a surprise that Second Prince want to recruit more forces."

"Bastard!" the king cursed with extreme anger.

In the Royal Clan, the fights between fathers and sons, among brothers, were the most painful but unavoidable things. The king had tried so hard not to have such things happen. When the fights

among his sons had happened several times, he still pretended that nothing had gone wrong. However, whatever he did, they were useless. His three sons still ended up in the worst situation.

...

Chapter 589: You Misread!

"Who doesn't want to sit on that throne? Everybody does. That is normal. Second Prince had such an ambition. He shouldn't be blamed on that," Song Jue casually talked.

"And then?" the king asked.

"What do you expect? Who do you think he is? Of course, Xiao Xiao wouldn't agree. It didn't end with happiness." Song Jue still sounded casual. "I heard he got his entire family wiped out after that day. Those who look for trouble always die early!"

Song Jue's words were sharp. He meant more than what he said, and he didn't want to hide anything.

The king's face contorted and he said, "Did he do anything he shouldn't in the House of Ye? That bastard son. He didn't say anything offensive, did he?"

Song Jue said, "If he did, do you think he could leave here safely?"

He emphasized the last few words.

The king was relieved. "That's true."

[My second son was bodacious and vile, but he would never do

anything he shouldn't. He knew how to act under restraint. I believe he didn't dare to seek troubles in Ye Nantian's house after all.]

They had some casual talk after that and then the king took leave.

He hadn't acted like a king since he stepped in this house. He was more like an old friend. Song Jue acted far from a servant. He acted like he was just trying to send away some unexpected visitor. He wasn't that distant, but not enthusiastic at all!

However, the king didn't mind. Steward Song didn't mind either!

"I will go to Ling-Bao Hall and visit the man everybody is talking about recently, Feng Monarch."

That was his last word before he left.

Song Jue looked at the king and his men leaving. He felt stressed. [He suspects after all. However, so what? Look what your bastard son has done. Trouble after trouble. You are suspecting, so what? Even if you know the truth, what can you do?]

And he murmured after leaving with his hands on the back.

- Bang! -

He kicked on the door to shut it!

That was loud.

A few blood guards were frightened by the old man Song. They were nearly freaked out.

[Oh my bloody heavens!]

[The king has just left and you actually shut the door with a kick like this!]

[How about take it mildly to kick the door. That was loud enough to shock the entire Chen-Xing City there!]

[Why are you so disgruntled!]

[That is... That is the king. Even though you are disgruntled, you shouldn't show it like this...]

[This is a firm and solid charge of offending the king!]

[That is looking for death! My lord! Lord Song!]

"What are you looking at? Shut the gate, will you?!" Song Jue humphed and then walked to the yard, murmuring, "What a fxxking day... Rats, dogs, all can get in for a visit now... Where do

you think this is? I don't have time to deal with you! Pah!"

As expected, the blood guards passed out at the door.

What Song Jue said... That was so valiant and bodacious, wasn't it?

...

The king walked for a long distance after he left. He hadn't said anything; he just showed a dark face.

Master Sun seemed like he wanted to say something. He looked at the king's face and spoke in a low voice, "Your majesty, I wonder if I should say what I am thinking now."

The king half closed his eyes and said, "What is it? Go ahead!"

Master Sun got closer and spoke in a voice that only he and the king could hear, "Your majesty... I saw that steward in the House of Ye... I felt... familiar somehow..."

The king frowned and said in a deep voice, "Familiar? How?"

Master Sun's eyes flashed. He said, "That day... The superior cultivator who threw Second Prince down from that tower... I fought against him but got defeated by one palm hit... I deeply remembered it... that man's postures..."

The king's face turned stiff. He turned to Master Sun and looked at him. His eyes were filled with cold lights. "Hmm? Do you mean..."

Master Sun was sweating. He said, "This Steward Song... I think... maybe... he could be that guy..."

The king's face changed color as he stared at Master Sun's face. His eyes looked extremely dangerous at the moment.

Master Sun felt terrified like he had never did!

He could feel the killing qi from the king!

It was not against the steward though. It was against Master Sun himself!

It was just for him!

Master Sun quivered.

However, the king only showed that for seconds. He returned to peace soon and looked at Master Sun. He said in a low voice, "You misread, I am afraid!"

And then he stared at Master Sun.

Master Sun felt wet on his back. He wiped the sweat and said, "Right. I was defeated by one hit. I must be lost there. I misread it."

"Sure you did," the king said again.

"Yes," Master Sun said. His heart beated even faster.

The king casually said, "Since you know it now, you should not mention it again. If it spread out to the public, that would cause a huge mistake!"

Master Sun nearly kneeled down. "Yes, your majesty! I will never mention a word about it in my life."

The king had shown his attitude and position about that. Master Sun had been following him for so many years. He surely knew what that meant.

[I don't care if you are right about it or not! Remember you did misread it!]

[House of Ye can not be touched.]

[If the House of Ye falls, the kingdom falls.]

[Especially now!]

[Second Prince committed such a crime. How can we keep going behind this case?]

[Royal dignity? Honor?]

[We have lost it at the beginning!]

[If we stick on it in the name of the Royal House, everybody will treat us as fraud!]

The king blinked his eyes and answer with a ‘hmm’, then he stopped talking.

Master Sun didn’t dare to speak a word. He and the others were only following the king.

However, the king’s breath was unstable, sometimes heavy, while sometimes weak. His face was changing expressions too. Apparently, he was having multiple emotions.

Nobody noticed that the king’s eyes had a sense of confusion.
[Song Jue? Was it really him?]

The king believed that the murderer must be somebody else. However, Master Sun’s words made him think deeper. Things were getting complicated...

It seemed everything was suddenly behind a thick cloud.

While he nearly arrived at Ling-Bao Hall, he finally took a long breath out and murmured something.

"The bastard deserves to die. I have no words to say!"

In fact, Master Sun didn't know. The king decided to put this down because of something bigger!

Even if he decided to call charges to the murderer, could he?

...

Chapter 590: Visiting Ling-Bao Hall

Let alone how powerful Ye Nantian, the Great General was, the House of Ye had the power to wipe out Second Prince's family in one day and their man could throw Second Prince down off the tower and defeat two great martial artists. Royal House didn't have the capability to mess with them at all!

If the king decided to turn against the House of Ye, he would certainly lose and be laughed at!

...

Ling-Bao Hall.

Ye Xiao was lying on the bed after dealing with some small business. He was thinking of the day when Xiu of the Heavens would bring him more materials. He thought of the nine thousand more meteoric iron, and was filled with happiness...

Suddenly...

"The king is coming!"

It was reported to the entire Ling-Bao Hall!

Wan Zhenghao was shouting as loudly as he could.

"Sweep the floor! Hurry! Damn it!"

"This way! Here..."

"There... There!"

"You... Hey! Go get on that thing..."

"You, you and you..."

"Guards, marshals!"

"Hurry up! For god's sake! You assassins get the hell back to your rooms and sleep through it... You will be doomed if you got caught by the royal guards..."

"Oh for fxck's sake! I know you are assassins. You can pretend not, can't you..."

"Hurry! Red carpets..."

"Clean it, you fool! Fxck! The front hall is still making deals... I will be damned..."

Wan Zhenghao jumped up and down, busy like hell.

He was a rich man. He was the richest man in the world!

But apparently, he had never met a king so closely!

He had received a king before, but it was in the auction. There were so many treasures on sale. The king came to the auction because he should, but he didn't even say a word to Wan Zhenghao.

Now, however, was different. The king came to his place on purpose. That was something he had never experienced before. Boss Wan really hadn't seen a king so close before. This was record breaking.

That was why he was particularly thrilled!

It was like there was a clockwork in his butt, making him jump up and down in excitement.

His fat face was all red.

Wan Zhenghao was definitely better than any king in Land of Han-Yang on wealth, experience, knowledge and age. He could see a king with disdainfulness if he wanted, however, he was just too low. He wasn't like the richest man in the world at all. He just heard that the king was coming for a visit, and he was so flattered, ready to suck up to the king. That was so low...

After that, his excitement was forcibly suppressed down by somebody else.

"What is it?" Feng Monarch frowned as he showed a dark face. He showed up at the stairs, looking down at those who were busy doing things with dissatisfaction. "Wan Zhenghao, what the hell are you doing? Are you insane?"

Wan rushed over with excitement, talking incoherently, "Monarch, his majesty, his majesty is... is coming..."

"So what? Is he an old friend to you whom you haven't met in bed for a long time?" Feng Monarch looked down at him.

"Urh..." Wan Zhenghao felt like he was thrown cold water on. He faltered. "No... I am not that kind."

"No... Then why are you acting like you are sexually aroused?" Feng Monarch looked at him with disappointment. "As the boss of Ling-Bao Hall, you should be more sober and steady-going! Understand?"

Boss Wan stared at him. He couldn't believe it. "Monarch, that is the king we are talking about..." He thought maybe Feng Monarch mistook it. He kept emphasizing it, "The king! It's the king of the Kingdom of Chen... Ahhh..."

Feng Monarch took a long breath out and sighed. He looked at Wan Zhenghao with many emotions in the eyes such as 'mud can never hold the wall', 'this is so shameful' and 'how do I end up having you as my understrapper'. He sighed and said, "I know he is the king. He is the owner of this land. So what? What? Is he going

to crown you or something?"

Wan Zhenghao was shocked. "No."

"Or maybe you want him to give you a chance to be an official?"

"Urh... Maybe he wants to, but I really don't like it."

"Or maybe he will give you money?"

"Urh... It is always me giving him money. The kingdom is never going to give us money."

"Is he going to swear brotherhood with you?"

"Hmm... Maybe he wants to, but I don't like it either."

"Can he give you a wife?"

"Maybe he can and he plans to, but I still don't like it. I don't need a wife. I don't need it!"

"Will he kill you if he feels offended by you?"

"Not really. Even though he may want to, but he wouldn't dare."

"He is going to give you anything you need? What he can offer are things you don't like. Then why are you so excited?" Ye Xiao looked at him and disappointedly said, "Look at your spiritless face! What the hell did you learn during all the years you have lived?"

Wan Zhenghao was enlightened. He was shocked. He felt ashamed!

He then gradually realized it. [That's right. The king comes, so he does. It has nothing good to do to me. Why am I excited? What for?]

"Wan Zhenghao, you are the boss of Ling-Bao Hall. You have lived over three thousand years! You are the richest man in the world. You have a group of assassins under your command, including the three top assassins in the league. Ling-Bao Hall has just posted the reward warrant with the biggest bounty in the history! You should stay higher than any king in this world! You must be sober! You must stay firm! You must be stable! Calm down! You are a great figure! Understand?" Feng Monarch was giving him a lesson.

Wan Zhenghao was ashamed. He could only agree.

"However, things should be done to greet our guest after all. You just need to pay attention to your self-status." Ye Xiao solemnly spoke, "A powerful man's heart will not be influenced by anybody!"

"Thanks for your guidance, Monarch!" Wan Zhenghao was

convinced.

...

The king and his people finally arrived.

The first feeling he had was, [Great Ling-Bao Hall indeed!]

[So unique!]

[The legendary place indeed!]

Ling-Bao Hall was quiet and clean. Red carpets were on the floor, and business was paused for the visit.

However, the people in it were all steady and calm.

They were polite.

But they didn't seem thrilled at all, even when the king arrived!

He couldn't feel any greasiness at all.

Only respect, but it stayed within the boundary of respect.

The king praised in his mind. [This may be the only group of

people I have ever seen who are so polite but not flattering in my country...]

He looked over and suddenly got astonished by what he saw!

He saw a giant fat guy stepping out from inside the hall. There should be a poem for this unbelievably fat guy.

‘The unique and only fatty in the history;

The fattest being in the firmament!

One footstep causes an earthquake;

One body shake leads to a big wave!’

[That is legendary fat, marvelously fat, fat in a myth!]

[That is such a miracle about being fat!]

...

Chapter 591: Come Meet Me Inside!

The fat guy walked over to the king with the fat on his body waving like waves. He bowed to the king. While he was about to say something, he suddenly fell on the floor!

The earth shook because of it, as if an earthquake was coming!

Everybody was shocked. [What the hell is happening?]

The king frowned. He was confused and thought, [What the hell is it? Is he showing respect to me? By touching the floor with his entire body?]

Wan Zhenghao was moving under the watch of everybody. He seemed to be trying to get up?

However, he was too heavy. It was really difficult for him to get up after falling on the floor. He pushed the floor with his hands three times, but he just couldn't.

Some servants of Ling-Bao Hall came over and tried to pull him up together. Finally, he stood up.

The king was too shocked that he nearly couldn't say a word. "It is... the first time we meet, my man. No need for such an inimitable salute."

He had heard that Boss Wan was badly overweight. However, he never expected that he would be so fat! It terrified him indeed.

Wan Zhenghao finally stood firm. He didn't seem embarrassed at all. He just smiled and casually spoke, "Your majesty, you mistook me. I just tried to make a fist salute. However, I am seriously overweight. I lost balance and fell down. Ha. What a joke. I am just man from countryside. I am truly not the man you want, your majesty. Hehe!"

"Ahem..." The king suddenly lost his words. [He didn't do that to make a salute. He didn't even want to kneel! Countryside? Not the man I want? Isn't it showing his position? He really is a big guy with big guts!]

"Is Feng Monarch here?" the king asked.

He apparently didn't want to continue the topic about Wan Zhenghao anymore. The real owner of Ling-Bao Hall was Feng Zhiling. It was more important to see the real boss.

"He is in the inner hall, waiting for you, your majesty," Wan Zhenghao said. He admired Feng Monarch so much. [Great Monarch! What he said was so right. I didn't flatter the king, and he still remained the same! We have power and wealth, why should I care about royal privilege? That is right!]

However, as Wan Zhenghao answered, the men around the king all were annoyed.

[Is this Feng Monarch in Ling-Bao Hall too arrogant?]

[His majesty has come and he actually didn't come out!]

[Does he want his majesty to get in to meet him?]

[How bodacious!]

"Bodacious!" Master Sun angrily shouted. His eyes were like lightnings. "How dare Feng Zhiling not come out and greet his majesty? That is the crime of disgracing the king!"

Wan Zhenghao didn't change the expression on his face. He blandly said, "Monarch is in the Kingdom of Chen, but he is never a citizen of Kingdom of Chen! Ling-Bao Hall is all around the three kingdoms, yet Monarch never bowed to any king yet. He will never. The reason he gave the kingdom so much money was for the interest of Ling-Bao Hall. He wasn't doing it as a responsibility of a citizen. Maybe the kingdom never wanted to return any favor. Well, that would be a mistake we make in business then. That would also be a great mistake of the kingdom."

That was such a tough talk with sharp words. He actually outwitted the group of men by talking.

Nobody could argue against that.

Feng Monarch was not their people. Surely he wouldn't need to bow to the king. He had devoted a huge fortune to the Kingdom of

Chen. That was a great favor, but it was not something he should have done.

In other words... a favor should be returned!

The king smiled, "That's right. Feng Monarch stayed in this kingdom and has helped the kingdom a great deal. I should have come and visit him a long time ago. Please, Boss Wan, could you go inform Feng Monarch."

He waved his hand to make Master Sun and others calm down.

Wan Zhenghao smiled like a big flower. "Monarch has given the order. If you come, you can go into the inner hall. No need for further report!"

That made the officials and martial artists more furious!

[Actually... No need for further report? What the hell! Who do you think you are?]

[That is inordinately bodacious!]

[That is no less criminal than treason!]

The king was quite casual though. He stopped the officials and smiled. "I am not his king anyway. He is the host while I am the guest. Please, lead the way, Boss Wan."

The king had experience dealing with such kind of men, such as Ye Nantian and Song Jue... He didn't really feel difficult about Feng Zhiling's attitude.

In fact, not to mention Feng Zhiling, Chen Xuantian even had certain respect for Wan Zhenghao.

That was a monster who had lived for over three thousand years after all. He was the richest man in the Land of Han-Yang. Even if Feng Zhiling didn't suddenly pop up, Wan Zhenghao should still be a legend in the history. All kings in the world should respect him.

After all, all kings wanted to live longer. It would be perfect if they could be immortal. In Wan Zhenghao's life, there were so many people who had tried to conquer Ling-Bao Hall for the secret of immortality. However, none of them truly got anything from him. Nobody got the secret of being immortal. Instead, those who had messed with Ling-Bao Hall all vanished within a few years!

There was a question people loved to discuss for a long time. If the House of the Chaotic Storms fought against Ling-Bao Hall, who would win? However, the House of the Chaotic Storms never wanted anything from Ling-Bao Hall—not even the secret of immortality or the money. The two forces had never fought against each other. If not for Feng Zhiling forcibly getting in Ling-Bao Hall and taking charge, the two forces would never have any relation!

Surely, there were just some guesses on that in the world. Only

people of either of the two sides knew the truth.

No matter what, Chen Xuantian, the King of Kingdom of Chen, didn't know the truth!

He met Wan Zhenghao, the immortal man, and he was going to meet the man who was above Wan Zhenghao, the legendary supreme dan-maker, Feng Zhiling. Chen Xuantian really didn't think he should see himself as a king!

To show sincerity, he stopped the royal martial artists from coming with him. He followed Wan Zhenghao into the inner hall alone!

They entered the inner hall.

The king finally met the legendary figure, Feng Monarch, Feng Zhiling!

...

Chapter 592: Three Things!

He was a legendary master dan maker who could make supreme dan beads. He could stop a disturbance by himself. He could handle countless assassins by himself. He could fight against lots of superior cultivators in the world by himself. He could donate seventy billion to the military force by himself. He could spend five hundred billion to make a reward warrant! He set a new rule to the martial world by himself!

He was average height, average weight, average skin colors, not too young, not too old...

He looked so normal!

He was the kind that couldn't be easily recognized in a crowd.

However, he had made such a great achievement!

"Finally, I am lucky to see the world-shocking Feng Monarch. I am most fortunate." The king smiled.

He wasn't surprised though.

In fact, no matter what Feng Monarch looked like, the king wouldn't be surprised! Those who made great achievements were not all with pretty faces.

In fact, the king felt it real that Feng Monarch looked this normal.

"Your majesty. I didn't go out and greet you. You must not mind me." Ye Xiao stood up and slightly bowed. "There are so many assassins waiting to kill me. Once I show up there, troubles will come. If anything accidentally happens to you, that will be my fault."

That was a fair explanation though.

However, the king thought not. [He has a sharp tongue. That is not true. You can face all superior cultivators in the world and act casually... Now we are in your own place, yet you said you were afraid there would be any accident on me... To hell I believe you!]

But he still smiled and said, "Not at all. Feng Monarch, you are so thorough and thoughtful. That is what we all should be."

They looked at each other, smiling, then they took the seats. They didn't sit as a king and his man. They sat only considering the relation of guest and host.

Ye Xiao made the tea himself. He introduced every piece of the tools and cups, and then he introduced the tea leaf. He even said many other meaningless words. The king was just smiling and listening. He didn't look impatient at all.

Finally, when Ye Xiao finished, it became awkwardly silent.

Nobody talked.

They seemed to compete on who had better manners. Nobody talked first.

The king apparently wanted the initiative. [I am the king of this great kingdom. I came for a visit in person now, and I try to be humble. Even though you are powerful, you should know how to treat me well as a person in high position!]

Ye Xiao didn't hurry. [You came to me, being so humble. You must want something from me. Since you want something from me, you shouldn't play high-hearted here. You don't talk. Fine. I won't talk. Let's see who talks first!]

The king apparently thought too highly about Ye Xiao. He was in a high position in the world, but he barely knew anything about the manner he should follow. That was meaningless to him at all!

All he cared was to control everything, to take the initiative in all situation!

After a long time, the king finally gave up. He said, "I come for a few things."

The conversation finally started.

Ye Xiao sat up straight and said, "Please, your majesty."

The king spoke solemnly, "First. Thank you for the seventy billion donation, Feng Monarch. Thank you for the kindness. It solved a great financial problem for the kingdom! It helped a great deal in the war affairs! Feng Monarch, you have high merit and worthy prospects. You took off the blade upon billion people's necks. I am grateful!"

Ye Xiao smiled. "I am flattered, your majesty. It is just a easy work. It really doesn't mean anything. I may have saved many lives, but please, it is not my credit. It all depends on the Kingdom of Chen. Not me!"

The king's face was a little stiff. And then he nicely said, "Second. The five hundred billion price reward warrant has put the other two kingdoms in great danger. It helped the Kingdom of Chen a lot. I will always remember this."

Ye Xiao waved his hand and smiled. "That is overpraise again. I just want to take revenge. That's all. I can't just do nothing knowing somebody had put a bounty for my head. I didn't do it for the Kingdom of Chen really. I don't think I should be credited!"

The king sincerely spoke, "No matter what you did it for, it benefited my kingdom a great deal! Feng Monarch, you did help the kingdom."

And then he changed expression on the face. He spoke in a low voice, "The third thing... In fact... Feng Monarch, how did you find out the unforgivable crime of my bastard son?"

Ye Xiao suddenly looked up and stared at the King.

There were sorrow, regret, and pain in the king's eyes, but there was no hatred.

Ye Xiao shook his head and smiled. "Why, your majesty? Why don't you just say what you really want to say? I really don't understand what you just said."

The king shook his head and bitterly smiled. "Feng Monarch, we don't need to be obscure on this."

Ye Xiao shook his head. "Your majesty, that was a charge of death. How could I commit it?"

The king said, "Ling-Bao Hall stands beyond all livings in the world. How will you die? Feng Monarch, one who dares to act should also dare to bear responsibility! Second Prince's family was wiped out. The murderer should be extremely powerful, and he should lead a bunch of men. Those men killed like butchers. They are apparently well-trained assassins. That was an assassination group with strict discipline!"

"Only three forces in the world could lead such a group of assassins. Boundless Lake. House of the Chaotic Storms. Ling-Bao Hall!"

The King seriously spoke, "House of the Chaotic Storms is rather

powerful, but they would never attack people in the royal clan. They only do things in the dark, so it is not the House of the Chaotic Storms."

"Boundless Lake. There are only a few golden label assassins in the Kingdom of Chen. Besides, they were seriously damaged in the previous disturbance. They are not in good condition. Besides, as I know about Boundless Lake and what I got to know about my bastard son, if Boundless Lake attacked him, that might not be a victory. Even if they won, they would have to pay a lot. Boundless Saint would never do that!"

"So, it all pointed to the last powerful force. Ling-Bao Hall is the only possible one."

...

Chapter 593: I Did It!

"Only Ling-Bao Hall could get away without being noticed after the bloodshed, and then go to other places to process the reward warrant... Suspicion was cleared. That was flawless."

Ye Xiao coldly smiled. "Can I understand it this way. Your majesty, you are trying to put such conviction on us just because of what you just said?"

The king said, "Monarch, you misunderstood. I am not here to condemn anybody today. My son had committed such unforgivable crimes. He deserved to die! How could I mention anything about reproach. That would be shameless. Ling-Bao Hall sent assassins to do a great thing both for the kingdom and the people. What should be reproached there?"

Ye Xiao retorted, "I guess you are still trying to push this conviction on Ling-Bao Hall! There are so many people in the world who could do that. Why are you so sure it was us? Isn't it a bit reckless?"

"There may be many powerful assassin organizations in the world, but none of them could be so righteous, except for Feng Monarch, who has strong sense of justice and hates evil that much!"

The king solemnly spoke.

Ye Xiao was surprised.

[Strong sense of justice?]

[Me?]

"I never have any sense of justice." Ye Xiao said, "I never want to be a heroic man. I will do whatever it takes to achieve what I want, no matter how dirty it needs to be. I will kill whoever I want to kill! That has nothing to do with any sense of justice!"

He blandly smiled and said, "Your majesty, you just can't let go of this case. You want to know the truth so much. Since you have to believe Ling-Bao Hall did it, let me admit it then. Fine. I killed Second Prince's entire family!"

When he said it, this situation reminded him the first time when he met the king in Prince Hua-Yang's Palace.

The king was so aboveboard, great-hearted and generous.

He trusted Ye Nantian with all his heart!

Ye Xiao decided to tell him the truth. Surely, he acted like he was pestered beyond endurance and committed something he hadn't done.

He didn't really fear about committing the crime though, even as Feng Zhiling or Ye Xiao. [Even if it really turns into a fight, so

what? The worst situation would be I get away from this place.]

[Who in this world could really tackle me?]

In fact, if Ling-Bao Hall turned against the Kingdom of Chen, that would only be a great trouble for the Kingdom of Chen!

The king stared at Feng Monarch with sharp eyes. He felt a prick in his heart.

The murderer who killed his son was right there, admitting it, but what could he do with it?

Could he avenge his son?

How could he be so shameless though?

He couldn't avenge his son and he even had to reward the man who killed his son!

The king sighed and closed his eyes in sadness. He murmured, "If I... If I am not a king, I will kill you no matter what it takes to avenge my son. I may not be able to kill you, but I will try."

"No matter how unforgivable and heinous he was, he is still my son after all. He is blood of my blood..."

"Nobody could blame me for anything if I avenge my son. The worst they can say about me is only I am selfish..."

"But I am a king!"

"I can only... sigh with no words to say! With shame!"

The king made a long sigh.

"I understand. I do." Ye Xiao's eyes seemed sharp. "But, I still have some words for you, since you came in person. If things could start over again, if I find somebody like your son again... I will still kill him!"

"In fact, you should be felicitated. I came here late. That gives you many years of happiness with your sons. I should have come much earlier and killed Second Prince's family earlier. That would have saved countless innocent lives. Well, that would also take away many years of your happiness!"

"No matter what, I will kill those who deserve to die!"

"Even though it may put me in the opposite of the king, I will still do it!"

The king solemnly spoke, "Actually, I will make the same choice too. If I found somebody who committed such crimes, even if it is my son, I will!"

After that, he stopped talking. He couldn't hold it anymore. Tears silently rolled down on his face.

Ye Xiao sighed. "Please don't feel sad, your majesty. It is worse to have such a son than not!" He took in a deep breath and said, "There are so many unpleasant things in one's life. Even a king has to make many choices that he doesn't want to. Since you choose to be a good king, you can't be a good father to such a vile son at the same time!"

The king's body shook.

[Since you choose to be a good king, you can't be a good father to such a vile son at the same time!]

"That's right!" The king bitterly spoke, "I should be blamed!"

Ye Xiao sounded cold, "This time, the Second Prince was slaughtered. It was bloody and vicious, but it saved the kingdom from a big misfortune! I believe you have done some research. You know the power Second Prince had... It was hidden from the light, but it was absolutely powerful!"

He who heard the string song knew its magnificence.

The king was moved.

That was true. He did send many people to do the research. Before Second Prince died, even though he had just lost the support from the noble clan, he still had a rather powerful force. He had one top league Sky Origin Stage cultivator and a lot more cultivators in high levels of Sky Origin Stage. That was nearly equally powerful with Boundless Lake. If Second Prince rose up and fought for the throne, even though nobody knew who would win, one thing could be sure was that the kingdom would be in war and under chaos!

Ye Xiao touched the ring on his finger and then blandly smiled. "I knew you are on the way here, so I prepared these."

- Splash! - Suddenly, some account books and records showed up.

They were piled up like a small mountain.

"All the evidences are recorded in these books. It states how Second Prince took out the first step and also what exactly he did to the girls in different cities... The money he got... all the filthy things he did. That is shocking and aboveboard!"

"It shows the sins of him!"

"Some of the women were... wives and sisters of the soldiers who have been fighting with their lives in the battle!" Ye Xiao showed a smile with anger and sneer. "The number is... over one hundred thousand!"

Chapter 594: Burnout?

"That means... over one hundred thousand soldiers who are loyal to you, who serve you, who risk their lives to fight for you and the kingdom, left their wives, sisters, and daughters behind in the city under your protection. Yet your son made them prostitutes! If they know that the women they loved were treated that way by their king's son, what would they think of you? What would they do? I wonder what would you think?"

Ye Xiao sneered.

What he said was like an extremely sharp needle stabbed deep into the king's heart!

No matter how tough he was, he couldn't help trembling with a pale face!

Suddenly, his heart was filled with complex emotions, there were anger and sorrow!

"Ah!"

The king spat out warm blood. His face looked ill like gold paper. "Bastard!"

Ye Xiao was shocked. "Your majesty, are you ok?"

In fact, since the king had sent people to investigate about this case, the king should know about what he told earlier. He never expected to provoke the king like this. He just wanted to satirize it!

The king gasped and then looked better. He weakly smiled and said, "Nothing serious. Just a relapse."

He was quiet for a while and then said, "I am to be blame on this. No matter how, I have to... try to make it up for the soldiers!" His eyes were filled with determination.

That was a promise. "I shall never let the soldiers down!"

And then he sighed. "Feng Monarch, you don't have many connections to the Kingdom of Chen really. I am sure about it today... I guess I don't need to hide anything from you... I... don't have much time to live."

Ye Xiao was surprised. He asked in a low voice, "Why?"

"I have traveled from south to north all my life. I am bearing so many wounds. My life essence is seriously damaged... I have been resting in recent years. That is just struggling on the edge. I feel myself burning out now. I am afraid I don't have much time left."

The king blandly said, "I have been so weak these years. That's why... I didn't really pay attention to the education of my sons. I hope they can take over the throne by righteous methods..."

"I never expected... that it led to such big a mistake."

"Your life essence is damaged?" Ye Xiao frowned, "I remember that royal house has bought some supreme dan beads in the previous auction. I am sure my supreme dan beads can absolutely save you!"

The King bitterly smiled. "Your supreme dan is marvelous. We had some... I was so excited about it too. After taking those dan beads, I did get better. It brought me more time, but my body is like a giant funnel... no matter how many medicine materials are put into it, they will all be burned out in a short time."

"Supreme dan is powerful and marvelous. It created a big wave of medical effects. It made me spirited for several months, however, no matter how powerful it was, it would be used up. It could make me feel better temporarily, but couldn't solve my problem. My loss in life essence is impossible to fix." The king bitterly smiled. "I guess this is my fate. Even supreme dan cannot change it."

"So please don't worry, Feng Monarch." The king took a breath out. "I am resigned. I just want to make my kingdom peaceful and steady... I just want to make it a better place before I go... I want one of my son can take over the throne in a good way. I don't want any chaos in the kingdom... That's all I want before I die."

Ye Xiao was quiet.

The king was being honest and frank. Those were words from the bottom of his heart. Ye Xiao felt it trustworthy.

However, the king underestimated the dan beads of Feng Monarch. The supreme dan beads he had were just some Supreme Pei-Yuan Dan beads. Those were the basic dan beads in the martial world. Even though they were in supreme level, they were still Pei-Yuan Dan. There were also other dan beads that could save life from death.

Any of the dan beads Ye Xiao gave Bing-Er earlier could save the king! More than enough!

Ye Xiao was hesitating though. [Should I save him or not?]

Surely, the king knew nothing about that!

However, Ye Xiao didn't understand why the king was being so frank and honest to a stranger.

That was not so like a king, was it?

The king knew Ye Xiao was confused. He said, "Feng Monarch, do you feel weird because of what I said?"

Ye Xiao nodded. "Yes."

The king smiled, "That is such a helpless thing for a king. The king is always the loneliest person. The only thing the king couldn't have is friends. However, I am not that lonely after all. I

guess I have friends. In the world, there are two people who can listen to me like this. Ye Nantian and you."

"Ye Nantian is like a brother to me. You, this is the first time we meet, so you are not my friend, but I know you are a man who I can really talk to!"

"Ye Nantian. I have kidnapped him for so many years. If I tell him these words, I am afraid he is going to stay here forever... You know he is such an honorable man..."

"So I can only talk to you."

"Feng Monarch is a person with broad sight of the entire world!"

"You spent seventy billion for the people in the Kingdom of Chen. You spent five hundred billion to save the people and to solve the chaos! You slaughtered a prince because you know that is justice. You did it for the innocent women and for the people in the world!"

"You are not a citizen of this kingdom. That's true... But I am sure you are... kind to this kingdom!"

"If I can't talk to you, who else can I talk to?"

The king smiled.

Ye Xiao looked peaceful, but in fact, he was entangled in his heart. [Am I really that noble? That great? Am I really that boring? I am the so called hero? Come on! Is it even possible? Really? No way!]

He then sighed and said, "I am flattered, your majesty. However, it really doesn't mean a lot to me anyway. I am also leaving Land of Han-Yang, to be honest."

The king smiled. "I know you are going to leave this world sooner or later. I am not surprised. However, Ling-Bao Hall cannot leave with you, right?"

Ye Xiao bitterly smiled. He understood.

He understood what the king was asking for now.

"No matter whether I am here or not, maybe I am somewhere else, Ling-Bao Hall will never be controlled by others." Ye Xiao blandly spoke, "So I have to tell you to stop planning on it. It will only bring you trouble."

...

Chapter 595: I Want to Kill Crown Prince Too!

The king said, "I understand. In thousands of years, whoever wanted to control Ling-Bao Hall, including some kings, ended up having nothing. I am certainly no exception. However, what I hope is that Ling-Bao Hall can stand where Feng Monarch stands to support the kingdom you are supporting now. I guess that is not against your will, right?"

That was the end of the topic.

None of them said anything more about it.

The king brought up another topic, "Feng Monarch, you are above this mortal world looking at the mess here. I guess you have your points about the Kingdom of Chen... I wonder... what is your thought about my kingdom?"

Ye Xiao blandly said, "Picturesque."

The king apparently didn't want such perfunctoriness. He kept asking, "How do you think of my son, the Crown Prince?"

Ye Xiao's eyes were sharp. He blandly spoke, "Your majesty, do you really want to hear the truth?"

The King answered, "Absolutely!"

Ye Xiao spoke word by word, "I want to kill him!"

The king was shocked!

He never thought that his question would lead to such an unexpected answer!

He would not be surprised if Feng Zhiling answered the question perfunctorily like he answered the first question. Even if he didn't answer it, the king wouldn't be surprised. He actually wanted to hear something positive about the Crown Prince. However, Feng Zhiling responded with such a sudden and murderous answer!

Before the king said anything, Ye Xiao moved his feet to kick away the evidence about Second Prince. He waved his hand and then lots of papers fell to the floor.

That was another big pile.

"These are the things your Crown Prince baby son has done. I haven't finished the collection yet, as I don't have enough time to do it."

"Here. These are evidences about how he colluded with foreign forces to try to drag you off the throne."

"These are evidences about how he persecuted the officials who

didn't agree to join him. Second Prince had committed unforgivable crimes, but the Crown Prince is also shameless!"

"These are the evidence of him fornicating with your concubines. I guess you have no idea at all. One horse, rode by two men. Hmm. Those are more than just one horse. Many horses, rode by two men? Father and son. Forgive me for my ignorance. I really don't know how to describe that..."

"These are... how he..."

"These are..."

The king looked at the evidences being sorted out by Ye Xiao one by one. He felt only cold in the body.

When he saw the evidences of treason and fornication... he felt like he fell into a frozen cave!

As he heard Feng Zhiling sneering with words like 'one horse, rode by two men', he felt extremely angry, disappointed, and hopeless at the same time. What surprised Ye Xiao was that he didn't spit out blood or curse anything. Instead, he started to coldly laugh.

"Hehehehehe..."

The king stood up and calmly spoke, "I apologize for laughing like this now."

Ye Xiao was calm and he spoke in a deep voice, "That is not hilarious at all, your majesty. Please, you should take care of yourself."

The King blandly spoke, "How? With such a wonderful son!"

And then he said, "I want a favor from you. Please!"

Ye Xiao said, "Please do tell."

"I want to take these things away! I don't want anybody else to know this." The king pointed at the two piles of things.

"That I can promise you. What happened here will not be known by others." Ye Xiao said, "I guess we shouldn't let others to take these things. Let me give you a space ring as a gift then."

He took out a space ring, sorted out the things on the floor and put them into the ring.

And then he taught the king how to use the ring.

The king's face was cold like ice, "Feng Monarch, I apologize that I must have bothered you today. It is late. I should go... If... If there will be a chance for us to see again, let's have a long and good talk again."

Apparently, the king couldn't stay any second more.

As a king, he was disgraced.

As a husband, he was disgraced!

As a father, he was disgraced!

As... As a man, he completely lost his dignity!

Even a normal man would be disgraced to hell if such a thing happened to him, let alone he was a king of a great kingdom!

How could he stay any longer!

When he said 'if there will be a chance', he paused for a long time. He felt that he might not live long, so there might not be such a chance to meet Feng Zhiling again. Besides... even if he had the chance to see Feng Monarch again, he might not want to do it anymore!

Feng Monarch knew too much about his disgrace!

If not that Feng Monarch was too strong and hard to kill, no matter how honorable the king was, he would want to kill Feng Monarch without any hesitation!

His second son ran a giant brothel and murdered women. His oldest son was even worse. He actually planned treason. More unforgivably, he actually fxxked his father's women...

The king's face was all red. He walked staggeringly. He kept asking himself in the heart, [My... royal family... what family is it really?]

[Is it really that indecent?]

[Am I... really that frustrated?]

Ye Xiao watched the king staggering out. He felt sorry for him.

As a king, a good king, he has great ambition and determination. He worked so hard for the kingdom and loved his people so much. He ruled the kingdom in a tough way, but he never was arrogant.

Chen Xuantian, the king of Kingdom of Chen, was the most decent king Ye Xiao had ever seen!

However, such a king was betrayed like that!

And he was dying.

His life was full of darkness!

"Your majesty!" Ye Xiao suddenly said.

The King stopped and said, "Feng Monarch, what more do you want me to know?"

"Nothing." Ye Xiao said, "I know you are sick. I just want to help you on that."

The king was shocked, and then he bitterly smiled and shook his head, "Feng Monarch, thank you for your kindness. I appreciate it. I placed great expectations on supreme dan. I did take some supreme dan beads and my body became better. I was full of hope that time, but then the helplessness stroke me down... What I have is uncuttable."

...

Chapter 596: Reconstruction!

The king was being frank. 'I am incurable. I am hopeless. I am resigned!'

Ye Xiao spoke in a low voice, "Medicines cure disease. There is no incurable disease in the world. You can eat this dan bead before you make the judgement."

And then he gave him a jade bottle.

The king took the bottle. There was a mass of fog inside the jade bottle, flowing around a dan bead which shined with colored lights. It quietly sat inside the bottle.

"Supreme Dan bead..." The king bitterly smiled. "It is a marvelous dan bead, but I don't think it can help me in any way. Well, it may spirit me up though... Thank you, Monarch."

He didn't hesitate; he directly opened the bottle and took out the dan bead. He swallowed it without even looking at it.

"Farewell!" The King stepped out with big strides.

However, after a few steps, he stopped. He was shocked!

A stream of warmth rose inside his body and ran over his body in a rather comfortable way!

Chen Xuantian clearly felt that the wounds in his body that no medicines could cure in the past were actually fading away under the touch of the warmth. His inner organs that should have been dry for so long were being moistened and strengthened!

It all happened during an instant!

However, he clearly felt everything during this instant!

The life essence that had been drained up was refilled and enhanced immediately!

His body was even stronger than before! He was even more healthier than when he was young!

The king was a cultivator himself. He wasn't weak at all. He felt the change and he operated his martial art to check it out. He understood that the dan bead he just ate actually cured his body that no other medicines could cure!

He was surprised with unparalleled joy!

That was stronger than the feeling of sorrow and shame!

He clearly felt the efficacy of the dan bead ongoing inside him. His body was getting better and better!

He felt that he could live another thirty years with this body!

[What kind of supreme dan is this? How marvelous!]

He turned around and stared at Ye Xiao. His lips were trembling. "What... What is this dan? How..."

Ye Xiao blandly spoke, "Just supreme dan. It's good you feel better. In fact, you don't need to know what dan it is. It isn't worth mentioning. Just a small favor."

It was surely a supreme dan bead, but not a normal one. It was a Reconstruction Dan in supreme level!

It was rather famous in the world. It was known as a low version of the Nine-rolled Golden Dan. Nine-rolled Golden Dan was just a tiny bit lower than Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan. Reconstruction Dan was surely something precious!

However, cultivators in higher stages didn't really want the low version Nine-rolled Golden Dan. Nine-rolled Golden Dan could save any life from death as long as the soul was still there!

In fact, whatever was named with 'nine-rolled' must be reaching the limit of some efficacies, such as Nine-rolled Purple Cloud Dan which recovered souls; Nine-rolled Recovery Dan which recovered cultivation capabilities; and the Nine-rolled Creating Dan that Meng Huaqing brought to Ye Xiao. They were all marvelous dan beads!

Reconstruction Dan was a low version of Nine-rolled Golden Dan. It only had great efficacy on people under Dream Origin Stage. It could solve all problems on physical damages, cultivation loss, soul deficiency and other worse diseases. However, for cultivators above Dream Origin Stage, it was close to nothing. That was why no high stage cultivators valued it.

However, those high level dan beads were dangerous. If people not strong enough ate those dan beads, they might explode to death because their bodies couldn't handle the massive energy. However, Reconstruction Dan was special. It wouldn't burst anybody into explosion.

It needed an enormous amount of different materials to make Reconstruction Dan. It was rather difficult to make. No dan-makers would make it largely. However, Brother Egg had went crazy earlier, and there were many Reconstruction Dan beads among the dan beads it made. He had given a few to Bing-Er, and now he was giving it to the king. The king was not a strong cultivator and he was ill, so he might not be able to hold other kinds of supreme dan.

In fact, the king was dying. Dan beads like Reconstruction Dan was the best choice for him!

As expected, it made the king recover to health. He was like having a rebirth.

"Thanks!" The king was silent for a while before he said in a low

voice.

"No need." Ye Xiao smiled. "You and me... will never meet each other again in this life anyway. Take it as a farewell gift from me."

The king bitterly smiled, "True. I guess I will never see you again in this life."

He slowly turned around. "Feng Monarch, take care. We will never meet again, but I am grateful to you forever!"

"I promise. No matter where you go, as long as Ling-Bao Hall forever follows your guidance to do good for the people... the Kingdom of Chen will never let it fall in this world!"

After that, he stepped out with big strides. He was so vigorous, vividly an overwhelming king.

Ye Xiao took a breath out with relief.

It didn't go as he expected, but it was a good relief for him anyway.

Crown Prince was going to fall soon.

Ye Xiao's eyes flashed. He thought about the day when Crown Prince framed him. There was a Sky Origin Stage cultivator beside the prince.

Guan Zhengwen.

"It is time to deal with the old day's business. If not, I probably will forget it. I didn't want that stupid king to suffer, otherwise, I wouldn't bring up the story about that bastard prince. Honorable man takes up to ten years to revenge. Well, I am no honorable man. I don't want to wait ten years." Ye Xiao coldly smiled.

...

Chapter 597: Extreme Joy Begets Sorrow - Immerse Yourself in Mystical Adventures - Webnovel - Immerse Yourself in Mystical Adventures

Crown Prince was celebrating with a feast in his place.

Second Prince had died several days. There was no sign of the murderer yet. Not that nobody caught the murderer, but there was no clue about who the murderer was at all.

However, no matter what, it didn't matter for the Crown Prince!

The only thing mattered was that Second Prince was dead! Totally dead! Couldn't be more dead!

In other words, his biggest opponent in fighting for the throne was gone!

Besides, Second Prince's horrible reputation made Crown Prince look great and righteous!

He could just relax now!

How could he not enjoy it?

The fact that he just lost a brother...

[Humph! He is my brother? That horrible man whom the entire kingdom is cursing?]

"Man in royal clan has no kinsfolk!" Crown Prince respected such a statement greatly. "What brother? B*llshit! He deserved to die! Well done! He died in such a great time!"

He was holding a private feast in his house that night.

He didn't want to be a brother to Second Prince, but in fact, nobody could deny it, including himself!

He made a feast to celebrate his brother's death... That was a serious fault!

That was why he didn't dare to do it conspicuously. He had to do it under cover. No matter how happy he was, he had to show a face of grief. However, gathering some friends to have a decent dinner was fine.

At the moment, he was toasting. "Elder Guan, I guess we won't need to take that last step."

Guan Zhengwen was smiling.

General Ye didn't find him. Now that the biggest opponent was gone, they didn't need to kill Second Prince, but only to wait for

the king to die. Crown Prince would get on the throne, and he would get on the highest position in the court, as he had been following and supporting the Crown Prince.

How could he not be happy with a bright future right there in front of him?

"When I become the king, I will never forget you all!" Crown Prince said. He put an end with this promise to the feast, which lasted till midnight.

Guan Zhengwen casually walked on the street. He felt like floating in the air.

The liquor made him anesthetic. He was excited in the head. What excited him most was the promise of the Crown Prince.

"Guan, you have done so much. You are beyond everybody else here. I won't forget it. When I sit on the throne, you will definitely become an indispensable figure in the court!"

Crown Prince said these to him in private.

Whenever he thought of these words, he felt thrilled.

[Indispensable?]

[I am never going to get any position on the old king's side.]

[But... every new king brings his own courtiers! I eventually caught up with the fast train of the Crown Prince.]

[The three princes fought for the throne. Crown Prince and Second Prince were the most powerful ones. They both had massive impacts. Third Prince was nothing.]

[Now Second Prince is dead. He lost his life and his reputation. Third Prince is weak. Who on earth could defeat Crown Prince?]

[It is a certain thing that Crown Prince sits on that throne.]

[That means, it is a certain thing that my future, my family's future... are full of hope!]

[My son... my grandson...]

[There is a good saying, when a man attains enlightenment, even his pets ascend to heaven. That fits the rule of court so much.]

[As long as me and my next two generations stand firm in the court, my clan will become an aristocratic clan of officials.]

[My clan will be standing in this kingdom forever.]

[All our children will be benefited by the fame!]

[My blood will continue for century after century!]

[With my cultivation capability, I can at least stay in court for fifty more years. With me in the court, my family will absolutely rise. That is for sure!]

Every time when he thought of the future of his family, he felt good.

He even felt the dark night was adorable.

The ghastly moonlight splashed in the sky. It covered the ingenuous glow of the moon.

The fog was dense.

Guan Zhengwen was still in high spirit. He casually walked into an alley. By making another turn, he would arrive home, his sweet and warm home.

He smiled. He needed to share the good news to his family as soon as he could. For so many years, he had done so many filthy things for the Crown Prince, but he knew it was worth doing.

Even though he sometimes felt guilty, he didn't regret, because he did it for his family!

He walked into the next alley casually.

Right when he took the turn at the corner, his body was stiff because of what he saw.

His eyeballs nearly popped out of their sockets.

In the narrow alley, in the dense fog, a man stood in front of him, quietly waiting for him.

"Here you are. What took you so long." That man sounded clear and loud. His voice resounded in the night.

Guan Zhengwen was frightened and shocked.

[This man has been standing here all along. Why haven't I noticed him? I only got to realize it when I saw him. I just had a glance on him. He is wearing white clothes. He is tall, standing there right before me. However, he is not far away. Why can't I see his true appearance? I can't see through him. Does it mean...]

"Who is this? Why are you waiting for me here?" Guan Zhengwen said while he was secretly operating his spiritual power. He realized that this might be the most brutal fight he had in his life.

He might die under a small mistake!

That man in white didn't show any killing intent.

But he showed up there waiting for him. That showed many things.

That man slowly turned over. The moonlight splashed on half of his face.

Guan Zhengwen was terrified. His eyeballs nearly popped out. He exclaimed, "Ye Xiao?"

The man was tall and pretty with decent manners. His eyes were profound. He smiled softly.

That was the young lord in the General's House, Ye Xiao!

The man who had been framed by Guan Zhengwen!

...

Chapter 598: Kill You Right Now! - Immerse Yourself in Mystical Adventures - Webnovel - Immerse Yourself in Mystical Adventures

No matter who was waiting here, even if it was Ye Nantian, Guan Zhengwen wouldn't be so surprised... but, it was Ye Xiao! [Ye Xiao... How is it possible?]

Ye Xiao blandly smiled. "The spirited old Master Guan. What? You didn't expect me?"

Guan Zhenghao took in a deep breath and nearly breathed in the fog into his chest. He spoke in a low voice, "I didn't. I never knew that Lord Ye is actually a peerless superior cultivator! In fact, nobody in the city, even in the kingdom would expect this. Lord Ye actually hides it so deep. I believe I am not the only one who cannot see through you!"

Ye Xiao shook his head lightly and smiled. "I am flattered, Elder Guan. I am surely much beneath you and your Bone Melting Palm."

Bone Melting Palm!

Guan Zhengwen's pupils twisted as he heard these words. He suddenly felt upset and annoyed, brushing the happiness and joy in his chest away.

It turned out it had always been a fake image to him!

[Ye Xiao was actually this powerful in cultivation, so how could I actually frame him?]

[He knew it. He just didn't say it. He was playing. He kept it a secret till now. Now he is going to make his strike!]

[What the steward, Song Jue, did and what Ye Nantian did after that were all acting. They were playing me and Crown Prince as if we were monkeys for entertainment. He could have found me any time he wanted. He could get me whenever he wants!]

While he was feeling like he was in the prime moment of his life, enjoying it, Ye Xiao showed up and struck right on his head, destroying his dreams and terrifying him at the same time!

Guan Zhengwen was terrified. The sweat on his back gradually soaked his clothes. He tried to maintain his composure as he spoke in a low voice, "Lord Ye, you are a smart man. How admiring. However, there is one thing I don't understand. Could you please solve it for me?"

Ye Xiao blandly spoke, "I guess you want to know why I have to do it now, not earlier. Right?"

"That's right!" Guan Zhengwen said, "The power you showed just now, if you want to kill me, you could do it anytime you want. You could even kill me without letting me know what really happened. Why now? Why tonight?"

That was the thing he couldn't understand the most.

"That's simple. It wouldn't feel good to kill you back then. That's all." Ye Xiao casually walked over to him with his hands on the back. His snow white clothes was slowly moving in the dense fog, as if he was a god descending to the world, walking among the misty clouds.

"You have been hiding for half of your life. You are apparently great in martial art, but you kept it under the table. You showed up as a scholar, got involved into the battle for the throne, and all you want is nothing but high position in court so that it will benefit your future generations. I am sure that you have been looking forward to your son, your grandsons, and all the children of yours to become officials because of your hard work!"

What Ye Xiao said put Guan Zhengwen into sorrow.

[That's right. That's all I need.]

"You said it yourself. I can kill you anytime I want, then why wouldn't I wait for a better moment that would give me a better feeling? If I killed you a few months ago, you would probably still hope that after you died, Crown Prince would take care of your children because of all the dirty works you did for him."

"If you died, you just died. You wouldn't feel pain, sorrow, and desperation. It must be boring to kill you that way."

Ye Xiao blandly spoke.

"Why are you so sure that I will be desperate now?" Guan Zhengwen sneered.

[Don't you know the Crown Prince is already invincible now? The king is seriously ill. He is dying soon!]

[In other words, Crown Prince will become king! He will be much more powerful than he is now!]

"Heh, heh. You will be desperate," Ye Xiao blandly spoke, "because Crown Prince is going to be f*cked up. The king knows that Crown Prince had committed treason. He also knows Crown Prince slept with his women..."

"What... What did you just say..." Guan Zhengwen stepped back and opened up his eyes widely as he stared at Ye Xiao. He couldn't believe it.

"Crown Prince planned treason. He successfully associated with many officials and generals. You, Guan Zhengwen, played quite a great role in it. Before Crown Prince slept with the women, as far as what I know, it was you who put drugs in their tea... That is why Crown Prince could always get the women he wants."

"Now the king knows everything, so Crown Prince's future is obvious. The best that could happen to him is to become common

people."

Ye Xiao looked at Guan Zhengwen, whose face was grey like ashes. "Once he is gone, the hard work you spent all your life on will all be wasted. All your hopes will be broken down. Your children will be in the blacklist of the court, and none of your descendants will ever rise again."

"The Crown Prince might have a chance to live in misery for the rest of his life, but you are surely dying. After all, it is better I do it than somebody else, so that I can take my revenge."

Ye Xiao said, "I guess you can die without regrets in my hands!"

Guan Zhengwen gritted with his teeth as he glared at Ye Xiao fiercely. His temples were quivering. He furiously spoke, "You liar!"

"You are a liar! How is it possible! How do you know all that?"

"It is impossible that the king will know it. He is seriously ill. Even though he knows, so what? Crown Prince is the only qualified one. No matter how vile he is, he is the only choice!"

"You liar!"

Guan Zhengwen called Ye Xiao a liar three times.

However, he couldn't cover the terror in his eyes.

All those Ye Xiao said were secrets hidden deep inside Guan Zhengwen's heart!

He called Ye Xiao liar and tried to deny it, but he knew that it wasn't a lie!

Doom!

He was finished!

The only thing he had now was the dream!

Ye Xiao coldly looked at him. "Is it really that important whether I am lying or not? The real important thing is that I am giving you a reason why I waited till now to kill you! Is it a good reason for you or not?"

Guan Zhengwen laughed in bitterness. "Ye Xiao, you are so vicious!"

"You don't even give me a chance to die in a good dream!"

"Because! You! Don't! Deserve! It!"

Ye Xiao blandly spoke.

Chapter 599: Increase Your Knowledge

"Guan Zhengwen, you have been gifted since you were a kid, learning fundamental martial arts from the martial artists in your family. After that, you secretly cultivated your martial art. When you had some achievement in cultivation, you sometimes hid martial art attainment. You sharpen your skills by practical fights, that is fine, but you killed a lot to collect more martial arts. Every man you killed, you would search their body. You forced people to teach you martial arts. You improved so fast, as you gathered different martial arts together. It was an accident when you found the Bone Melting Palm."

Ye Xiao sighed. "You have been through quite a rough life in cultivation. It must have taken you a great deal to have the capability you have now!"

"Most importantly, you actually disguised yourself as a scholar to cover your real personality as a cultivator. You have been trying to strengthen yourself and also be a gentle and humble scholar in front of the public. You are truly brilliant in both sides."

Ye Xiao's eyes shined with colorful glow in the dense fog as he stared at Guan Zhengwen's face.

Guan Zhengwen changed expression on the face again and again. After a while, he sighed.

What Ye Xiao said was right. It was the story of Guan Zhengwen from when he was a kid to the present day. It reminded him all

that he had been through in his life! Memories kept running up to his mind.

"If you keep doing that, it may be fine. You killed a lot in the first half of your life, but nobody could blame you. Sometimes, you have to do something you don't want to in martial world. That is the rule..."

"However, since you were recruited by the Crown Prince, you have become a complete vile and contemptible person. You want to fawn on him so much that you would do whatever the hell he asked you to do. You will complete those things so well to make him happy."

"You are loyal to him. You have no mercy, no kindness, and no humanity while you were carrying out a mission, even when you're facing innocent people. You did everything."

"That is your life!" Ye Xiao blandly spoke, "Tonight, I am going to hold justice for the heavens! I am here to kill you!"

He moved ahead in the dense fog and said, "By the way, there is one more thing I want to tell you. Something that will make you regret."

Guan Zhengwen's eyes turned cold as he said, "What is it? Do I have anything to regret even in such a moment? I have done all that I want to in my life. I never did and never will regret!"

"Really? You are truly a talented cultivator. Your achievement today proves it well. If you didn't spend much time playing a humble scholar and focused on cultivation, you may have broken the boundary of this world and become one among those in the higher realm."

Ye Xiao laughed. "If you gave up martial art and focused on literature, you should have been an important figure in the court long ago. It wouldn't be difficult to be a man with great power that's only beneath the king."

"However, you are so smart, but you went on two paths at the same time. You are limited in both ways!"

"You are bound to fail!"

He coldly spoke, "Maybe heavens want this for you. Heavens know when you kill. You murdered innocent and noble men. You have done all those vile things! You are not a noble cultivator, or an ingenuous scholar! Heavens would never let you stay well in both sides. Not only I want to kill you, but also the heavens."

"I am here now, so heavens must have decided to let you die in my hands! Heavens will is unchangeable!"

Guan Zhengwen stepped back with a gloomy expression.

He had been tough and confident in front of all the enemies he had met in his life, however, after Ye Xiao's talk, he lost it!

Every word Ye Xiao said was breaking down the weak points in his heart!

He completely lost his will to fight!

He felt more and more terrified.

Suddenly, he went mad, "Hold justice? You don't deserve that! You can't kill me!"

He laughed. "Who do you think you are? Who do you think I am? Even if you started cultivating when you were inside your mother, you are never my opponent! You are too young! You know nothing about the martial world! You know nothing about life and death in one instant! Haha..."

Ye Xiao looked at him like looking at a moron. He said, "Do you think cultivation level will decide the result of the fight here? Even though I am not stronger than you, do you dare to kill me? Do you dare to hit me by another Bone Melting Palm?"

Guan Zhengwen's face twisted.

He didn't! He didn't dare at all!

Ye Nantian was stronger than heavens in his mind.

Guan Zhengwen's entire family lived in the capital. Everybody knew it!

If he killed Ye Xiao now, the next morning, his entire clan would be wiped out!

Even if the king didn't do it, the Crown Prince would do it in advance. He would definitely sacrifice Guan Zhengwen and his entire clan to exchange for General Ye's forgiveness!

"If you die in my hands today, I promise you I won't do anything to your family. You die, and you die alone." Ye Xiao coldly smiled. "But if you dare to hurt me even just on my finger, I promise you your entire clan will lose the chance to see the sun come up again!"

Guan Zhengwen stepped back once more. He was sweating on the forehead.

"But I will not just accept death!" He shouted, "It isn't certain who would win!"

Ye Xiao shook his head and sighed. "Look at you, poor man. You don't even dare to talk loudly. It might be a waste to use the word 'tender love' on you, but I guess I will take it for now."

Guan Zhengwen shouted like a tiger roaring. He suddenly moved, like a lightning rushing forward.

He didn't dare to talk to Ye Xiao any longer, because he found

that the longer he talked, the more terrified he would become.

He was afraid he would lose all his will to fight if he kept listening to Ye Xiao.

As the dense fog rolled over, Ye Xiao laughed coldly. His white clothes fluttered in the wind as he waved his long sleeve. A pale hand was shown, then he murmured, "Let me increase your knowledge today. Let me show you what a true powerful palm hit is!"

As he said so, an overwhelming power suddenly surged.

...

Chapter 600: Heavens Aren't Blind!

The fog in the air suddenly rolled up and gathered on Ye Xiao's hand so rapidly, turning into a giant hand!

His hand didn't move, but the fog rushed over to it and shaped up.

Guan Zhengwen realized that he couldn't move ahead or retreat under the restraint of the palm. He couldn't escape.

As the giant hand showed up, it blocked the four sides around the two of them.

The only option left for Guan Zhengwen was to have a tough fight against Ye Xiao!

His eyes turned bloodshot; suddenly, he reached out his hand and crept towards Ye Xiao and his giant hand like a snake.

Bone Melting Palm!

The fatal and vicious palm skill that almost killed Ye Xiao! Or at least Guan Zhengwen thought so!

Ye Xiao smiled indifferently. He rolled over the hand and made a palm hit all of a sudden!

Guan Zhengwen made over a dozen different gestures in order to confuse Ye Xiao. However, before the fog palm hit on him, he already felt an overwhelming suppression rushing over like a huge mountain. The palm suddenly hit on his real hand directly!

His over a dozen gestures didn't work at all!

Ye Xiao actually found the real hand among dozens of fake palms and hit it!

- Boom! -

As the two palms touched, the fog palm exploded. The fog around them rolled away like clouds. Ye Xiao had actually hit Guan Zhengwen's palm ninety-nine times within such a short time!

Ninety-nine heavy hits!

Every hit was right on Guan Zhengwen's palm.

Guan Zhengwen was shocked. He couldn't believe it! After that, he heard the sound of bones cracking. He watched how his fingers, palm, wrist, arm softened... like a soggy noodle.

Suddenly, bones and flesh all became ashes!

He then exclaimed loudly and rolled away.

He didn't get away himself. He was hit away!

Guan Zhengwen only had one thought, [How is this possible?]

[He only spent an instant to see through my phantom palms and remove the Bone Melting Palm power on my hand. Within just that moment, he hit my palm ninety-nine times badly!]

[The fog is still rolling away, but my arm is totally doomed.]

[He just made a counterattack against my attack... It should only hurt my hand, but why did my entire arm get broken?]

[Is it some palm art like Bone Melting Palm?]

[If it is, he should have been in quite a high level in that martial art, according to the damage it just caused!]

Guan Zhengwen was terrified. He didn't want to believe this, even though he knew that it was the most possible answer!

"Don't be so surprised. This is not some special palm art. What I did, it truly doesn't mean anything. If I develop it to the prime level, it should be able to make one thousand hit instantly. That is why it is called Thousand Strikes Palm!"

With his white clothes fluttering in the air, Ye Xiao showed up like a ghost. He moved to Guan Zhengwen and lightly spoke, "Of

course, it is not always attacking the same place. In fact, it can hit on any part of your body. One thousand hits on one place or one thousand places are both workable!"

Guan Zhengwen's face turned grey. He was trembling.

He looked at Ye Xiao as if looking at a demon!

Ye Xiao blandly spoke, "I am much younger than you, but it doesn't mean I have to be much weaker than you. Regretfully, I have to tell you that you are completely wrong! Now, let me show you mercy. Just kill yourself now."

[Kill myself?]

Guan Zhengwen breathed heavily. His face showed his desperation. He suddenly shouted loudly and then rushed out like a flying arrow!

However, just as he shot out, a white figure flashed and caught up with him. Ye Xiao was right in front of him, staring at him with a pair of cold eyes.

"Well then, since you really don't want to die with dignity, I guess I should show you my fist art too!"

Suddenly, Guan Zhengwen felt his chest was punched continuously, like beating drums. He felt all his inner organs were crazily trembling because of the consecutive strikes. He also felt his

body was constantly moving backwards out of his control.

He couldn't defend it at all.

When he wanted to defend with his left hand, three fist strikes landed on it broke his entire left arm!

"Well, let me also show you my kicking art! You are never going to have any chance to see this again anyway. Now, feel them all with your body and the rest of your life!"

- Bang! - He kicked on Guan Zhengwen's chest like a whirlwind.

There was no sign of his foot when he kicked!

However, his chest was damaged badly by that invisible foot!

"This is One Kick Before Hell, which once shocked the entire Qing-Yun Realm!"

When Guan Zhengwen heard it, he was flying out like a kite without a string.

He fell down and hit the floor. Blood was running out through his eyes, nose, mouth and ears—he had such heavy injuries! He coughed out blood as he tried to open his eyes, only to realize that he was kicked back to his original position!

It was right on the spot!

He couldn't believe Ye Xiao could actually control his power so well.

Apparently, not all older men had a higher achievement, and older men were not sure to be more capable!

Guan Zhengwen smiled bitterly and struggled to stand up.

He found his two arms were like noodles. Not to mention lifting them, he couldn't even move them. He lowered his head only to see two feet in front of him.

The white robe was still fluttering in his sight.

He looked up with surprise and saw Ye Xiao's pretty face. His face was so exquisite that it didn't even seem to belong to this world. The eyes were cold like an ice mountain.

"You know what? What you feel now is exactly how it feels when you are hit by Bone Melting Palm. You can't move, your bones are melted... Five years ago, Li Yunsong, Minister Li of Penalty Ministry, who had always been honorable and righteous, died in his home with his bones all melted. Murderer escaped. Four years ago... Three years ago, the guard of Royal Concubine Wu died with melted bones. Murderer escaped... After that, she was raped by Crown Prince. She was forced to be his informant... One year ago..."

Ye Xiao stated all crimes Guan Zhengwen committed as his eyes turned colder. "Guan Zhengwen, say it yourself. If you really became a big figure in the court and held great power, heavens must be so blind!"

"However, heavens aren't blind!" Ye Xiao smiled. "Because I am here!"

...